



UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS
LIBRARY

BOOK	CLASS	VOLUME
Q. 821	G394c	25





Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2015

Chaucer's 'Boece'

ENGLISH FROM

"ANICII MANLII SEVERINI BOETII

PHILOSOPHIÆ CONSOLATIONIS

LIBRI QUINQUE."

EDITED FROM

MS. Ii. 3. 21, IN THE UNIVERSITY LIBRARY,
CAMBRIDGE,

BY

F. J. FURNIVALL,

M.A., TRIN. HALL, CAMBRIDGE; HON. DR. PHIL., BERLIN.



LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE CHAUCER SOCIETY

BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

MDCCCLXXXVI.

To the Memory of
HENRY BRADSHAW,
IN HIS DAY
THE BEST CHAUCER SCHOLAR IN ENGLAND.

First Series,

LXXV.

R. CLAY AND SONS, CHAUCER PRESS, BUNGAY.

CONTENTS.

						PAGE
FOREWORDS	...	...	...	...	...	iii
CHAUCER'S BOECE..	BOOK I.		PAGE			
1st Metre	...	...	1	1st Prose	...	2
2nd „	...	...	3	2nd „	...	4
3rd „	...	...	5	3rd „	...	5
4th „	...	...	7	4th „	...	7
5th „	...	...	13	5th „	...	15
6th „	...	...	16	6th „	...	17
7th „	...	...	19			
Book II.						
1st Metre	...	...	22	1st Prose	...	19
2nd „	...	...	24	2nd „	...	22
3rd „	...	...	26	3rd „	...	24
4th „	...	...	30	4th „	...	27
5th „	...	...	35	5th „	...	31
CHAUCER'S 'Former Age'			36			
CHAUCER'S 'Fortune'			38			
6th Metre	...	...	43	6th Prose	...	40
7th „	...	...	47	7th „	...	43
8th „	...	...	48	8th „	...	47
Book III.						
1st Metre	...	...	50	1st Prose	...	49
2nd „	...	...	53	2nd „	...	51
3rd „	...	...	56	3rd „	...	54
4th „	...	...	58	4th „	...	56

Book III (*continued*).

	PAGE		PAGE
5th Metre	60	5th Prose	58
6th „	61	6th „	60
7th „	62	7th „	62
8th „	64	8th „	62
9th „	68	9th „	64
10th „	74	10th „	69
11th „	79	11th „	74
12th „	83	12th „	80

Book IV.

1st Metre	86	1st Prose	85
2nd „	92	2nd „	87
3rd „	95	3rd „	92
4th „	101	4th „	96
5th „	103	5th „	102
6th „	111	6th „	104
7th „	114	7th „	112

Book V.

1st Metre	117	1st Prose	115
2nd „	119	2nd „	118
3rd „	123	3rd „	119
4th „	129	4th „	125
5th „	132	5th „	130
		6th and last Prose ...	133

Index and Glossary by Mr W. M. Wood	141
--	-----

FOREWORDS.

As this li. 3. 21 is the best MS. of Chaucer's *Boece*, I have not thought it worth while to make a Parallel-Text of it with inferior MSS, but have just printed it by itself,¹ and sent out with it Dr Richard Morris's edition of the Addit. MS. 10,360, as issued by the Early English Text Society in 1868. These will be enough material for an Editor, so far as the English text is concerned. The other requisite is the Latin text; but as that can be bought for 2s. or so, in Peiper's edition of the *De Consolatione* and Minor Works in Teubner's Library—and doubtless elsewhere—the Chaucer Society need not issue a fresh edition of it.

There is plenty of work to be done in the way of comparing Chaucer's English and Boethius's Latin. Some of the points Dr Morris notist in his Introduction. I will only now pass on to the future Editor of Chaucer's text the notion of our lamented friend HENRY BRADSHAW, that Chaucer's explanations or paraphrasings² of the Latin text, his *Glosae* on it, should be distinguisht by a different type from his englishings of that text. The recollection of this came back to me only yesterday; and I take at haphazard, as a sample of the plan, the 11th Metre of the 3rd Book. Let the reader first turn to p. 79 of the text, and read it right through. He can't tell what is Boethius and what is Chaucer. He gets a hint from the first *Glosa*, but is not told where that stops, or where the second begins or stops. Let him then read the same page as arranged overleaf,³ and all is clear:—

¹ Henry Bradshaw and Dr Richard Morris both agreed in this.

² I call em Chaucer's, tho believing that they are englishings of some Latin commentator's. How Metre V of Book II, *Felix nimium prior actas*, made Chaucer break into the beautiful *Former Age*, p. 36, is well known. The prose and verse renderings should be compared. In this MS. Chaucer's Balade of '*Fortune*' follows on p. 38-40.

³ I don't of course pledge Henry Bradshaw's memory to the details of my arrangement. Had he livd, he'd have surely betterd em.

Who so that sekith soth by a depe thoght	Quisquis profunda mente uestigat uerum	1
And coueyteth nat to ben de- seyuyd by no mys weyes lat hym rollen <i>and</i> trenden with- Inne hym-self / the Lyht of his inward syhte/	Cupitque nullis ille deuiis falli, In se reuoluat intimi lucem uisus	
And lat hym gadere ayein enclyn- yngge in to a compas the longe moeuynges of hys thowhtes /	Longosque in orbem cogat inflec- tens motus	4
And lat hym techen his corage that he hath enclosed <i>and</i> hyd / in his tresors / al þat he compaseth or sekith fro <i>with</i> owte/	Animusque doceat quidquid extra molitur	5
And thanne thilke thing that the blake cloude of error whilom hadde y-covered	Suis retrusum possidere thesauris. Dudum quod atra textit erroris nubes,	
shal lyhten more clerly thanne phebus hym selfe ne shyneth/ /Glosa/ /Who so wole seken the dep grounde / of soth in his thowht / <i>and</i> wol nat be deceyuyd by false proposiciouns / that goon amys fro the trouthe // lat hym wel examine / <i>and</i> rolle with-inne hym self the nature <i>and</i> the pro- pretes of the thing / <i>and</i> lat hym yit eft sones examine <i>and</i> rollen his thowhtes by good deliberacion or that he deme // <i>and</i> lat hym techen his sowle that it hat by naturel pryncyplis / kyndeliche y- hyd <i>with</i> -in it selfe alle the trowthe the whiche he ymagynith to ben in thinges <i>with</i> -owte // <i>And</i> thanne alle the dyrknesse of his mysknow- yngge shal seen more euydently to syhte of his vndyrstondyngge thanne the sonne ne semyth to syhte <i>with</i> owte forth /	Lucebit ipso perspicacius Phoebos.	
ffor certes the body bryngyngge the weyhte of foryetyngge / ne hath nat chasyd owt of yowre thowhte al the clernesse of yowre knowyng /	Non omne namque mente depulit lumen	9
ffor certeynly the seed of sooth haldith <i>and</i> clyueth <i>with</i> -in yowre corage	Obluiosam corpus inuehens molem. Haeret profecto semen introrsum ueri	

<i>and</i> it is a-waked <i>and</i> excited by the wynde <i>and</i> by the blastes of doctryne//	Quod excitatur uentilante doc- trina.	12
ffor wherfor elles demen ye of yowre owne wyl the ryhtes whan ye ben axed //	Nam cur rogati sponte recta cen- setis,	
but yif so were þat the norys- synges of reson ne lyuede .I.- plowngyd in the depthe of yowre herte/	Ni mersus alto uiueret fomes corde?	14

this is to seyn how sholden men
demen þe sooth of any thing þat
weere axed / yif ther neere a
Roote of sothfastnesse þat weere
yplowngyd *and* hyd in the nature
pryncyplis / the whiche sothfast-
nesse lyued *with*-in the depnesse
of the thowght/

<i>and</i> yif so be þat the Muse <i>and</i> the doctryne of plato syngyth sooth //	Quod si Platonis musa personat uerum,	15
al þat euery whyht lerneth / he ne doth no thing elles thanne but recordeth as men recordyn thinges þat ben foryetyn.	Quod quisque discit immemor recordatur.	16

The advantage of this plan is so obvious, that some of our Members may say, 'Why didn't you print us an edition thus arranged?' My answer is, 'Because I hadn't time.' My object in the Society is to provide future editors with the best material, to give them the best hints I can for preparing a new edition of Chaucer's Works, and then leave them to do it in their own way. All my work for all my Societies is—and has been for some years—in arrear, and when I was printing the *Boece* MS, I had just time to print it, and no more. I don't like to ask Messrs Clay how long the plates have been waiting for the Index and Glossary—which Mr W. M. Wood has now made, with the help of Dr Morris's Glossary, and a reference or two to me—and these short Forewords.

If hereafter I can get any leisure for more Chaucer work than completing what is already in hand, I may perchance try my hand at a new edition of the *Boece*.

3, St George's Sq., Primrose Hill, N.W.
Good Friday, April 23, 1886.



CHAUCER'S BOECE.

BOOK I.

[MS. ii. 3. 21. *University Library, Cambridge, vellum, ab. 1420,*
leaf 9, back.]

¶ The fyrste Metur [*in margin*]

A Las .I. wep¹[yng am constreyned to bygyn]-nen vers of
sorwful matere/ /pat whilom in] floryssynge [studie made
delitable ditees] For lo Rendynge Muses of poetes enditen
to me thinges to ben writen / *and* dreery vers of wrecched- 4
nesse / weten my face *with* verray teeres/ /at the leeste no drede
ne myhte ouercomen tho Muses pat they ne weeren felawes / *and*
foleweden my wey / pat is to seyn whan I was exiled / thei pat
weeren glorie of my yowthe² / whilom weleful *and* grene / conforten 8
now the sorful wierdes³ of me olde man⁴/ /For elde is comyn vnwarly
vp on me hasted by the harmes pat .I. haue / *and* sorwe hath com
aundid his age to ben in me/ /heeres hoore arn shad ouertymeliche
vpon myn heued / *and* the slake skyn tremblyth of myn emptyd 12
body/ /thilke deth of men is weleful pat ne comith nat in yeres pat
ben swete / but comyth to wrecches often yclepyd // Allas allas *with*
how deaf an Ere / deth cruwel torneth a-wey fro wrecches *and*
nayteth to closyn wepynge eyen / whil fortune vnfeithful / faorede 16
me *with* lyhte goodes the sorwful howre pat is to seyn the deth /
hadde almost dreynt myn heued/ /but now for fortune clowdy hath
chaungyd hyre deceyuable cheere to meward / Myn vnpietous lyf
draweth a long vnagreable dwellynges in me/ /O ye my frendes what 20
or wherto auauntede ye me to ben weleful / For he pat hath fallen
stood nat in stidefast degree /

¹ A bit of the MS. has been cut out for its pretty initial. For the words in brackets, compare Dr. Morris's ed. from Addit. MS. 10,340, E. E. T. Soc. 1868, p. 4.

² pelage [?: hypelage, a change (of cases)] *in margin*.

³ gloss: i. fata.

⁴ Antithesis *in margin*.

The firste prose [*leaf 11, margin*]

While þat I. stille recordede these thinges *with* myself /
and markede my weply compleynte *with* office of
 poyntel/ /I sawh standinge a-bouen the heyhte of
 4 myn heued a womman of ful gret reuerence by sem-
 blaunt/ /Hyr eyen brennyng *and* cleer seyng *ouer* the comune myht
 of men / *with* a lyfly coloure / *and* *with* swych vygor *and* strengthe
 þat it myhte nat ben emted/ /Alle weere it so þat she was ful of so
 8 gret Age / þat men ne wolden nat trowen in no manere þat she weere
 of owre elde/ /the stature of hir was of a dows / Iuggement / for
 som tyme she constreynede *and* shronk hyr seluen lyk to the comune
 mesure of men/ /*and* sumtyme it semede þat she towchede the
 12 heuene *with* the heyhte of hyr heued/ /*and* whan she hef hyr heued
 hyere / she procede the selue heuene / so þat the syhte of men look-
 yng was in ydel/ /hyr clothes weeren makid of riht delye thredes /
and subtil craft of *perdurable matere*/ /the whiche clothes she
 16 hadde wouen *with* hyr owne handes / as .I. knewh wel ¹After by hyr
 self / declaryng *and* shewyng to me the beaute / The whiche clothes
 a dirknesse of a forletyn *and* a despised Elde hadde dusked *and*
 derked / as it is wont to dyrken the smokede ymages/ /In the
 20 nethereste hem or bordure of these clothes / men redder ywouen in
 A grekyssh / p² / þat syngnifieth the lyf actyf/ /*and* abouen þat *lettre*
 in the heyeste bordure a grekyssh / t³/ /þat singnifieth the lyf con-
 templatyf/ /*and* by-twixen these two *lettres* ther weeren seyn degrees
 24 nobely ywroght in manere of ladders / by whiche degrees men
 myhten clymbyn fro the nethereste *lettre* to the vppereste/ /nathel
 handes of some men hadden koruen þat cloth by vyolence *and* by
 strengthe / *and* eueryche man of hem hadde born a-wey swiche peeces
 28 as he myhte geten / *and* forsothe this forseide wouman bar smale
 bookes / in hyr ryht hand/ /*and* in hyr left hand she baar a ceptre/
 /*and* whan she say these poetical Muses a-prochen a-bowte my bed /
and endityng wordes to my wepynges/ /she was a lytel amoued *and*
 32 glowede *with* cruwel eyen/ /who *quod* she hath suffred a-prochen to
 this sike man / the comune strompetes of swich a place þat men
 clepyn the theatre/ /The whiche nat oonly ne asswagen nat hise

¹ leaf 11, back.² praktik *in margin*.³ theorik *in margin*.

sorwes *with* none remedies / but they wolden feeden *and* noryssyn
 hym *with* swete venym // fforsothe these ben tho / þat *with* thornes
and prykkynge of talentus or affeccyons / whiche þat ne ben nothing
 fructefynge / nor profytable / destroyen the corn plentyuous of fruites 4
 of resone // For they holden hertes of men in vsage / but they
 delyuere nat foolkes fro maledye // but yif ye muses hadden
 withdrawen fro me *with* yowre flateryes / any vnkunnynge *and*
 vnprofitable man as men ben wont to fynde comunly amonges the 8
 poeple/ /I wolde wene suffre the lasse greuosly // For whi in swiche
 an vnprofitable man myn ententes ne weeren nothing endamaged/
 /but ye withdrawen me this man þat hath be norysshed in the
 studies or schooles of Eliaticis *and* of Achademicis in grece // but 12
 goth now rather away ye Mermaydenes / whiche þat ben swete til it
 be at the laste / *and* suffreth this man to be ¹Cured *and* heeled by
 myne Muses þat is to seyn by noteful sciences // *and* thus this com-
 panye of Muses Iblamyd / casten wrothly the cheere downward to 16
 the Erthe shewynge by rednesse hyr shame / they passeden sorwfully
 the thresshold // *and* .I. of whom the syhte plownged in teeres /
 was dyrked so þat I ne myhte nat knowen / what þat womman
 was of so Imperial auctorite/ /I wax al abaysshed *and* astoned / *and* 20
 cast my syht down to the Erthe // *and* by-gan stille for to abyde
 what she wolde don afterward/ /tho com she ner *and* sette hyr down
 vp on the vttereste cornere of my bed // *and* she byholdynge my
 cheere / þat was cast to the Erthe heuy *and* greuos of wepyng / 24
 compleyde *with* these wordes þat I shal seyen the perturbacyon of
 my thowht.

The .2.^{de} Metur [*margin, leaf 12, back*]

A Llas how the thowt of man dreynt in ouerthrowynge dep-
 nesse / dulleth *and* forletith his propre cleernesse / 28
 Myntyng to goon in to foreyne dyrknesses as ofte as his
 anoyos bysynesse wexeth *with*-owte mesure / þat is
 dryuen to *and* fro *with* wordely wyndes/ /this man þat whilom was
 free / to whom the heuene was opyn *and* knowen // *and* was wont to 32
 goon in heuenlyche paathes / *and* sawh the lythnesse of the Rede

¹ leaf 12.

sonne/ *and* sawgh the sterres of the colde Moone // *and* which
 sterre in heuene vseth wandrynge recourses .I. flyt by diuerse speeres
 This man ouercomere hadde comprehendyd al this by nowmbyr of
 4 a-countynge in Astronomie // ¹*and* ouer this he was wont to seken the
 causes whennes the sownynge wyndes mocuen *and* bysien the smothe
 water of the see/ *and* what spiryt torneth the stable heuene / *and*
 whi the sterre aryseth owt of þ^e Rede Est / to fallen in the westrene
 8 wawes // *and* what atempreth the lusty howres of the fyrst somer
 seson / þat hyhteth *and* aparailleth the Erthe with rosene flowres/
 / *and* who maketh the plentyuos Autompne in fulle yeres fletith
 with heuy grapes // *and* ek this man was wont to telle the diuerse
 12 cawses of nature þat weeren .I. hydde/ /Allas now lith he emted
 of lyht of his thowht/ *and* his nekke is pressed with heuy cheynes
 / *and* berith his cheere enclyned a down / for the grete weyhte *and*
 is constreynd to looken on the fool erthe

The ij^{de} prose [*Margin, leaf 13, back*]

16 **B**Vt tyme is now *quod* she of Medicine Moore than of *com-*
 pleynte / Forsothe than she entendynge to me ward with
 alle the lookynge of hyr eyen seyde // Art nat thow he
quod she/ /þat whilom norysed with my Mylk *and* fostered
 20 with myne Metes weere escaped *and* comyn to corage of a parfit man/
 / Certes I yaf the swiche armures / þat yif thow thy self ne haddest
 fyrst cast hem a-wey / they sholden han defended the in sikernesse /
 þat may nat ben ouercomyn knowestow me nat // whi artow stille /
 24 it is for shame or for asthonyng / it weere me leuer þat it weere for
 shame // but it semith me þat astonyng hath oppressed the/ *and*
 whan she say me nat oonly stille / but with-owten office of tunge /
and al downb // she leyde hyr hand softly vp on my brest / *and*
 28 seyde/ /her nis no peril *quod* she/ /he is fallen in to a litarge /
 / which that is a comune sykenesse to hertes þat ben desseyuyd/ /he
 hath a litel foryeten hym self // but certes he shal lyhtly remenbren
 hym self / yif so be þat he hath knowen me or now / *and* þat he may
 32 so doon / I wol wyppen a litel his eyen þat ben derkyd by the clowde of
 mortal thinges/ /These wordes seyde she / *and* with the lappe of hir

garnement Iplited in a frounce / she dryede myn eyen / þat weeren
 fulle of the wawes of my wepynges

The .3.^{de} Metur [*margin, leaf 14*]

THus whan þat nyht was descussed *and* chased a wey / dirk-
 nesses for-leften me // *and* to myne eyen repeyrede hir fyrst 4
 strengthe / *and* ryht by ensauple as the sonne is hid whan
 the sterres ben clusted / þat is to seyn whan sterres ben
 couered with clowdes / by a swifte wynde þat heyhte chorus/ *and*
 that the fymment stant dirked / by wete plowngy clowdes *and* þat 8
 the sterres nat apeeren vp on heuene // so that the nyht semeth sprad
 vp on Erthe/ /yif thanne the wynd þat hyhte boryas / Isent owt of
 the kaues of the contre of trace / betith this nyht // þat is to seyn
 chaseth it a wey // *and* descouereth the closed day/ /thanne shyneth 12
 phebus yshaken with sodeyn lyht // *and* smyteth with his beemes
 in merveylunge Eyen

The 3.^{de} prose [*margin, leaf 15, back*]

RIht so *and* non oother wyse / the clowdes of sorwe dissolved
and don a wey // I took heuene *and* resseyuede Mynde to 16
 knowen the face of my fesissien/ /so þat I sette myn eyen
 on hir *and* fastned my lookyng / .I. behoolde my noryse
 philosophie ¶ in whos howses I hadde conuersed / *and* haunted fro
 my yowthe / *and* I seide thus // O thow maystresse of alle vertuus 20
 descended from the souerein sete ¶ whi artow comyn in to this
 solitarie place of myn exil/ /Artow comyn for þou art maked
 coupable with me of false blames ¶ O quod she my norry / sholde I
 forsaken the now / *and* sholde I nat parten with the by comune 24
 trauayle / the charge þat thow hast suffred for enuye of my name/
 /Certes it nere nat leueful ne sittinge thing to philosophie / to leten
 with-owten compaygnie the wey of hym þat is innocent ¶ sholde I
 thanne redowte my blame / *and* agrysen as though ther weere by- 28
 fallen a newe thing/ /For trowestow þat filosofie be now alder-
 first assailed in perils by ffolk of wikkede manneres ¶ hAue I nat
 striuen / with ful gret strif in olde tyme / by fore the age of my
 plato / ayenis the foolhardinesse of folie // *and* ek the same plato 32

lyuyng / his mayster Socrates desseruede victorie of vnyrhtful deth
 in my presence // ¶ the Eritage of the which socrates / the Eritage
 is to seyn ¶ the doctrine of the whiche socrates in his opinioun of
 4 felicity / þat I clepe welefulnesse / whan þat the poeple of Epicuri-
 ens *and* stoyciens / *and* many oothre enforleden hem to gon
 rauysse euerich man for his part / þat is to seyn þat euerich of hem
 wolde drawn to the deffence of his opinion / the wordes of socrates /
 8 / they as in partye of hir preye to-drowen me cryyng *and* debatinge
 ther ayeins ¶ *and* koruen *and* to-renten my clothes / þat I hadde
 wouen with myn handes ¶ *and* with tho clowtes that they hadde
 Arraced owt of my clothes / they wenten away wenyng þat [I] hadde
 12 gon with hem euerydel / In whiche Epicuriens *and* stoyciens / for
 as moche as ther semede some traces or steppes of myn habite / the
 folie of men wenyng tho epicuriens *and* stoiciens my famuleres
 peruertede² some / thorw the errour of þe wikkede or vnkuynyng
 16 Multitude of hem / this is to seyn þat for thei semede philosophres
 thei weeren pursued to the deth *and* slayn // So yif thow hast nat
 knowen the exilinge anaxogore / ne the enpoysonyng of socrates ne
 the tormentus of zeno / for they weeren straungeres / yit myhtestow
 20 han knowen þe seneciens *and* þe canyos *and* the sorans of which
 foolk / the renou nis neyther ouer old / ne vnsolempne / the whiche
 men nothing elles ne browhte hem to the deth / but oonly for they
 weeren enformyd of myne maneres / *and* semeden most vnyk to the
 24 studies of wikkede foolk / *and* forthi þou owhtest nat to wondren /
 thowh þat I in the bittre see of this lyf / be fordryuen with
 tempestes blowyng a-bowte / in the whiche tempestes this is my
 moost purpos / þat is to seyn to displese to wikkede men / Of
 28 whiche shrewes al be the oost³ neuer so gret / it is to despise for it
 nis gouerned with no ledere of Reson / but it is rauysed only by
 fleytyng Error folyly⁴ *and* lythly // *and* yif they som tyme
 Makyng an oost ayeins vs / assayle vs as strengere / owre ledere
 32 drawith to-gydere hise rychesses in to his towr / *and* they ben
 ententyf abowte sarpuleris or sachels vnprofitable for to taken / but
 we þat ben heye a-bouen sykyr fro alle tumolte *and* woode noyse

¹ leaf 16.² gloss: s persequendo.³ id est acies.⁴ i sine consilio.

warnestored *and* enclosyd in swich a palis/ /whider as chateringe or
 a-noyenge folye ne may nat atayne/ /we schorne swiche rauyneres
and henteres of fowleste thinges

¶ The ferthe Metur [*margin, leaf 16, back*]

WHo so it be þat is cleer of vertu / sad *and* wel ordinat 4
 of leuyng // þat hath put vndir foot the prowde
 wierdes¹ *and* lookith vpriht vp on eyther fortune /
 he may his cheere holde vndescounfited ¶ the Rage ne
 the manesses of þe see *commoeuyng* or chasinge vpward heete fro 8
 the botme / ne shal nat moeue þat man Ne the vnstable moun-
 taygne þat hihte veseuus þat writith owthorw his brokene chymynees
 smokynge fyres / ne the wey of thonderlyht þat is wont to smyten
 heye towres / ne shal nat moeue þat man/ /whar to thanne // ¶ O 12
 / wrechches drede ye tyrauntus þat ben woode *and* felonos *with-owte*
 any strengthe/ /Hope after no thing² ne drede nat *and* so shaltow
 desermer³ the Ire of thilke vnmty tyraunt⁴ // ¶ but who so þat
 quakynge dredith / or desireth thyng þat nis nat stable of his ryht / 16
 þat man þat so doth / hath cast away his sheld / *and* is remwed from
 his place / *and* enlaceth hym in the cheyne *with* the which he may
 ben drawn

¶ The verthe prose [*margin, leaf 21*]

Felistow *quod* she thise thinges / *and* entren thei awht in thi 20
 corage // Artow lik¹ an asse to the harpe / whi wepistow /
 whi spillestow teeres/ /yif thow abydest after help of thi
 leche / the by-houeth discouere thi wownde // tho .I. þat
 hadde gaderyd strengthe in my corage / answered / *and* seyde/ 24
 /*and* nedeth it yit *quod* I of rehersynge / or of amonicion *and*
 sheweth it nat .I.-nowgh by hym self the sharpnesse of fortune /
 þat wexeth wood ayeins me / ne moeueith it nat the to sen the face
 or the manere of this place⁴ / is this the librarye / which þat þou 28
 haddest chosyn / for a ryht certeyn sete to the in myn hows / ther
 as thow desputedest ofte *with* me / of the sciences of thinges /
 towchinge deuynte / *and* mankynde / was thanne⁵ myn habite

¹ i. fata.

² leaf 17.

³ MS. desernien or deseruien.

⁴ glosst prison.

⁵ leaf 21, back.

swich as now / /was my face or my cheere swich as now // whan I
sowhte *with* the secretus of nature whan þou enformedest my maneres
and the reson) of alle my lyf / to the ensauple of the ordre of
4 heuene / /is nat¹ this the gerdouns þat I referre to þe to whom I haue
be obeysaunt / /Certes thow conformedest by the Mowht of plato
this sentence / þat is to seyn þat comune thinges or comunalityes
weeren blyful / yif thei þat hadden studied al fully to wysdom
8 gouerneden thilke thinges / /Or elles yif it so byfille / þat the
gouernoures of comunalityes studieden to geten wysdom / /thow
seydest ek by the Mowth of the same plato / þat it was a necessarye
cause wise men to taken *and* desire the gouernaunce of comune
12 thinges / for þat the gouernementus of Citees yleft in the handes of
felonos tormentours citesiens / ne sholde nat bryngen in pestelence
and destruccio) to goode fookk¹ / *and* ther-for I folwinge thilke
Autorite² desired to putten forth in excussio) *and* in acte of comure
16 administracio) thilke thinges þat I hadde lerned of the / among my
secre restingwhiles // thow *and* god þat puttethe in the thowhtes
of wise fook / ben knowynge³ *with* me / þat nothing ne browhte
me to maystrye or dignete / but comune studie of alle goodnesse /
20 / *and* ther-of comth it þat by-twixen wikked foolkes *and* me han ben
greuos descordes / þat ne myhten nat ben relesed by preyer⁴ // For
this liberte hath the freedom of *conscience* þat / the wraththe of
moore myhty foolkes / hath alwey ben despysed of me for sauacio) of
24 Ryht / /how ofte haue I recisted *and* *with-stonde* thilke man þat
hyhte *coningaste* / þat maade alwey assawtes ayeins the prospere
fortunes of poore feeble fookkes / /how ofte ek haue I put of or cast
owt / hym trygwille *prouost* of the kynges hows / bothe of the
28 wronges þat he hadde bygunne to don *and* ek fully performed /
/ how ofte haue I couered *and* deffended by the Autorite of me put
ayeins perils // þat is to seyn put myn autorite in peril for the
wrechched poore foolkes / þat the couetyse of straungeres vnpun-
32 yssed tormenteden alwey *with* myseyse⁵ *and* greuaunces owt of
nowmbre / /neuer man ne drowh me yit fro ryht to wronge /
whan I say the fortunes *and* þe Richesses of poeple of þe prouinces

¹ *glosst* nonie.

² *glosst* .s. platonis.

³ *gloss* .i. est inexorable.

⁴ *gloss* : concij.

⁵ leaf 22.

ben harmyd or amenused owther by pryuey Raueynes or by comune
 tributus or cariages / as sory was I as they þat suffreden the harm
 / glosa/ /whan þat theodoric þe kyng of gothes in a dere yer
 hadde hise gernerres ful of corn / *and* comaundede þat no man ne 4
 sholde byen no corn tyl his corn weere solde / *and* þat at a greuos
 deere prys/ /Boece withstood þat ordinaunce *and* ouer-com it
 knowynge al this the kyng hym self/ /Coempcion) is to seyn
 comune achat or byinge to-gidere þat weere estabelyssed vp on the 8
 poeple by swich a manere imposicion) / as who so bowhte a bossel
 corn he moste yeue the kyng the fifte part // Texte // whan it was
 in the sowre hungry tyme / ther was establised or cryed greuos *and*
 vnplitable coempcion) þat men sayen wel it sholde gretly turmenten 12
and endamagen al the prouince of compaygne/ /.I. took stryf ayeins
 the prouost of the pretorie for comune profit / *and* the kyng know-
 ynge of it / .I. ouer-com it so / þat the coempcion) ne was nat axed
 ne tok effect/ /Paulyn a consoler of Rome / the Rychesses of the 16
 which paulyn / the howndes of the palyse / þat is to seyn the
 officeres wolden han deuowred bi hope *and* couetise / yit drowh
 I hym owt of the Iowwes of hem þat gapeden/ *and* for as moche as
 the peyne of the accusacion) aiuged by-forn / ne sholde nat sodeynly 20
 henten ne punisse wrongfully albyn a conseylor of Rome/ /.I. putte
 me ayeins the hates *and* indignaciouns of the accuser Cyprian/ /is it
 nat thanne Inowgh I-sene þat .I. haue purchased grete discordes
 ayeins my self // But I owhte be the moore assured ayeins alle oothre 24
 foolk¹ / þat for þe loue of Ryhtwisnesse I ne reseruyd neuer no
 thing² to my self / to hem³ward of the kynges halle / by which I
 weere the moore siker/ /but thorw tho same accusors acusinge I am
 condempned/ /Of the nowmbyr of the whiche acusors oon basilicis 28
 that whilom was chased owt of the kynges seruisse ⁴is now compellyd
 in accusinge of my name for nede of foreyne moneye / Also opylon)
and caudencius han accused me / al be it so þat the iustice Regal
 hadde whilom demed hem bothe to gon in to exil / for hir trecheryes 32
and fraudes with-owte nowmbyr/ /To whiche Iugement they nolden
 nat obeye but defendedyn hem by the sikernesse of holy howses /

¹ gloss : scilicet romayns.

² gloss .i. affinite.

³ gloss .s. officers.

⁴ leaf 22, back.

þat is to seyn fledden in to sentuarie/ *and* whan this aperceuyd
 to the king¹ he comaundede þat but they voidede the Cite of Rauenne
 by *certeyn* day assingned / þat me sholde marke hem on the forheued
 4 *with* an hoot yren *and* chasen hem owt of the towne/ /Now what
 thing² semeth myhte ben lykned to this erwelte / ffor certes thilke
 same day was resseyued the accusynge of my name by thilke same
 accusors/ /what may ben seyð her to¹ / haþ my studie *and* my
 8 kunnyng deseruyd thus or elles the forseide dampnacion of me /
 made þat / hem ryhtful accusors or no³/ /was nat fortune asshamyd
 of this/ /Certes alle hadde nat fortune ben asshamyd þat innocens
 whas accused. / yit owte she han had shame of the fylthe of myne
 12 accusours/ /but axestow in somme of what gylt y am accused / men
 seyn þat I wolde saue þe compaygnye of the senatours/ *and* desires
 thow to heeren in what manere/ /I am accused þat I sholde han
 destorbed the accuser to beren *lettres* / by whiche he sholde han
 16 makyd the Senatoures gylty ayeins the kynges Real maieste/ /O
 maysteresse what demestow of this / shal I for-sake this blame / þat I
 ne be no shame to the² // Certes I haue wold it þat is to seyn the
 sauacion of the senat / ne I shal neuer leten to wilne it / *and* I
 20 confesse *and* I am a-knowe / but the entente of the accuser to ben
 destorbed shal cese // ffor shal I clepe it thanne a felonye or a synne
 / þat I haue desired the sauacion of the ordre of the senat³/ *and*
 certes yit hadde thilke same senat don by me thorw hir decretus *and*
 24 hir Iugementus as thogh it weere a synne and a felonye / þat is to
 seyn to wilne the sauacion of hem⁴ // but folye þat lieth alwey to
 hym self may not change the merite of thinges/ /ne I trowe nat by
 the Iugement of socrates þat it weere ⁵Leueful to me to hide the
 28 sothe / ne assente to Leesynge/ /but certes how so euer it be of
 this / I put it to gessen or prisen to the Iugement of the *and* of
 wise folk¹ // Of whiche thing al the ordinaunce *and* the sothe/ /for
 as mooche as foolk¹ þat ben to comyn after owre dayes shellen
 32 knowen it/ /I haue put it in scripture / *and* in remembraunce /
 / ffor thowchinge the *lettres* falsly maked / by whiche *lettres* I am
 accused to han hooped the fredom of Roome/ /what aperteneth

¹ gloss: quod dicit nichil.² gloss: quod dicit non.³ gloss: q. d. dubito quid.⁴ gloss .s. senat.⁵ leaf 23.

me to speke ther-of/ /the fraude hadde ben shewid apertly / yif I hadde had liberte for to han vsed *and* ben at the confessioun of myne accusours the whiche thing in alle needes hath gret strengthe // For other freedom may men hoepen/ /Certes I wolde þat som 4 other freedom myhte ben hopyd/ /I wolde thanne han answered by the wordes of a man þat hyhte Canyus/ /ffor whan he was accused by Gayus cesar germeynes sone / þat he was knowynge *and* consentynge of a coniuracion y-maked ayeins hym¹ // this 8 canyus answerede thus / yif I hadde wist it þou haddest nat wist it/ /in which thing sorw hath nat so dyled my wit / þat I pleyne oonly þat shrewede folk^t apareylen felonies ayeins vertu/ /but I wondre gretly how þat they may parforme thinges þat they han 12 hoped forto don/ /For whi wilne shrewednesse þat comth per-aenture of owre defaute / but it is lyk a Monstre *and* a meruayle / / how þat in the present syhte of god / may ben acheued *and* performyd swiche thinges as euery felonos man hath conceyued in his 16 thowht ayeins innocentus // For which thing oon of thy famyleres nat vnskyllfully axed thus/ /yif god is whennes comen wykkede thinges / / *and* yif god ne is whennes comyn goode thinges / but al hadde it ben leueful / þat felonos folk^t / þat now desiren the blod *and* the 20 deth of alle goode men / *and* ek of alle the senat^t / han willned to gon *and* destroyen me/ /whom they han seyen alwey bataylen / *and* defenden goode men / *and* ek al the senat / yit had I nat desserued of the faderes þat is to seyn of the senatoures / þat 24 they sholden willene my destruccion/ /thow remembreth wel as I gesse / þat whan I wolde doon or seyen any thing^t / ²Thow thy self alwey present rwledest me/ /at cite of Verone whan þat the kyng gredy of comune slawhtre caste hym to transpor vp al the ordre 28 of the senat / the gylt of his real maieste / of the whiche gylt þat albyn was accused / *with* how gret sykernesse of peril to me / deffendede I al the senat/ /thow woost wel þat I seye soth / ne I ne auauuncede me neuer in preysynge of myself/ /For alwey whan 32 any wyht resseyueth presious renou in a-vauntynge hym self of his werkes / he amenuseth the secre of his consience/ /but now thou mayst wel seen / to what ende I am comyn for myne Innocence /

¹ gloss .s. gayus² leaf 23, back.

/ I resseyue peyne of fals felonye for gerdoun of verray vertu / *and*
 what opyn confession) of felonye / hadde euer Iuges so a-cordaunt in
 erwelte / þat is to seyn as myn accusinge hath/ /þat eyther erreure
 4 of mannes wit / or elles condicion) of fortune þat is vncerteyn to alle
 mortal folk^t ne submittede some of hem/ /þat is to seyn þat it ne
 enclinede som Iuge to han pite or *compassion*/ /For al thogh I
 hadde ben accused þat I wolde brenne holy howses *and* strangle
 8 preestes *with* wykkede swerde or þat I hadde greythed deth to alle
 goode Men // Algates the sentence sholde han punyssed me present
 confessed or *committ*/ /but now I am remwed fro the Cite of
 Roome almost fyue hundred thowsand paas/ /I am *with*-owte
 12 deffence dampned to *proscriceion*) *and* to the deth / for the studie
and bowntes þat I haue doon to the senat/ /but O¹ wel ben they
 worthi of *merite* as who seyht nay/ /ther myhte neuer yit non of
 hem be *conuict*^t of swich a blame as myne is / of whiche trespas
 16 myne accusors sayen ful wel the dignete / the whiche dignete for
 they wolden dirken it *with* medlynge of sòm felonye/ /they baren
 me an hand *and* lyeden / þat I hadde polut *and* defowled my
 conscience *with* sacrilege²/ for coueytise of dignete/ /*and* certes thow
 20 thi self þat art plaunted in me chasedest owt of the sege of my
 corage / alle coueytise of mortal thinges/ /ne sacrelege ne hadde no
 leeu to han a place in me by-forn thyne eyen/ /For thow
 droppedest euery day in myne Eres / *and* my thowt³ / thilke
 24 comaundement of pictagoras / þat is to seyn Men shal *serue* to godde
and nat to goddes⁴/ /ne it nat *conuenient* ne no nede to taken help
 of the fowlest spirite // I þat thow hast ordeyned *and* set in swiche
 excellence þat thow makedest me lyk to god/ *and* ouer this the Ryht
 28 clene secre chaumbyr of myne hows þat is to seyn my wyf / *and* the
 compaygnye of my honest freendes/ *and* my wyues fadyr / as wel
 holy as worthi to ben reuerenced thorw his owne dedes/ /defenden
 me from alle suspencion) of swich blame/ /but O malice for they þat
 32 accusen me taken of the philosophre feyth of so gret blame / for they
 trowen þat I haue had affinite to malefice or enchauntement / by
 cause þat I am replenysshed *and* fulfylled *with* thy thechinges *and*

¹ *gloss ironice, and in margin* O meritos.

² *gloss* sorcerie.

³ leaf 24.

⁴ *in margin*, Homo debet seruire deo et non diis.

enformyd of thy maneres/ *and* thus it suffiseth nat oonly þat thy
 Reuerence ne avayle me nat/ /but yif þat thow of thy fre wille
 rather be blemished with myn offencion/ /but certes to the harmes
 þat I haue / ther bytydeth yit this ences of harm/ /that the 4
 gessinge *and* the Iugement of moche folk^t / ne looken no thing^t to
 the desertus of thinges/ /but oonly to the auenture of fortune/ *and*
 Iugen þat oonly swiche thinges ben purueyed of god / whiche þat
 temporel wele-fulnesse commendith/ /glose/ /as thus / þat yif a 8
 wyht haue prosperite he is a good man / *and* worthi to han þat
 prosperite/ *and* who hath aduersite he is a wikked man *and* god
 hath forsake hym / *and* he is worthi to han þat aduersite/ /this is
 the opinion^o of some folk^t / *and* ther-of comth þat good gessinge / 12
 fyrst of alle thing^t forsaketh wrechches/ /certes it greueth me to
 thinke riht now the diuerse sentenses þat the poeple seyth of me /
and thus moche I seye þat the laste charge of contrarios fortune is
 this / þat whan þat any blame is leyd vp-on a caytyf / Men wenen 16
 þat he hath desserued þat he suffreth // *And* I þat am put away fro
 goode men *and* despoyled of dignetees/ /*and* defowled of my name
 by gessynge / haue suffred torment for my goode dedes // Certes me
 semeth þat I se the felonos couynes of wikked men habownden in 20
 Ioye *and* in gladnesse/ *and* I se þat euery lorel shapith ^hym to
 fynde owt newe fraudes for to accuse goode foolk^t / *and* I se þat
 goode men beth ouerthrowen for drede of my peril / *and* euery
 luxurious tormentour dar doon a^{ll} felonye vnpunnysshed/ /*And* ben 24
 excited per-to by yiftes // *And* Innocentus ne ben nat oonly despoyled
 of sikernesse/ /but of defence *And* ther-fore me lyst to cryen to god
 in this wise///

¶ The fifthe metur [*margin, leaf 25, back*]

O Thow makere of the whel þat bereth þe sterres / which þat 28
 art^t yfastned to thy perdurable chayer / *And* tornest the
 heuene with a Rauessyng sweyh / *And* constreynest^t the
 sterres to suffryn thi lawe / so that the Mone som tyme
 shynyng^t wyt here ful hornes / Metyng with alle the beemes of the 32
 sonne hir brother / hydeth the sterres þat^t ben lesse / *And* somtyme

wan the Moone paale *with* hir' derke hornes aprocheth the sonne
leeseth hir lyhtes // And that the eue sterre *hesperus* which that in
pe fyrste tyme of the Nyht^t ¹bryngeth forth *hyr* colde Arysnynges /
4 Cometh est ayein *hyr* vsed cours / *and* is paale by the morwe at
rysyng of the sonne / *and* is thanne clepyd *lucyfer* / Thow
restreynest the day by shorter dwellyng in the tyme of colde wynter /
pat maketh the leeuës falle // Thow diuidest þ^e swyft tydes of
8 the nyht^t / wan the hoothe *somer* ys comyn / thi myht^t a-tempreth
the varyauntus sesoun of the yer / so pat *zephirus* the deboneyre
wynd brengeth azein in the first *somer* sesoun the leeuës pat þe
wynd pat hihte *borias* hath reft away in autumpne / pat is to seyn
12 in the laste ende of *somer* / And the sedes that the sterre that
hihte *arcturus* sawgh / ben waxen hye cornes / wan the sterre
Syryus eschaufed hem / ther nis nothings vnbownde fram his oolde
lawe ne forleetheth þ^e werke of his propre estat / O thow *gouernour*
16 *gouernynge* alle things by certayn ende / whi refowsestow oonly to
gouerne the werkes of men by dwwe manere / whi suffres thow pat
slydyng fortune torneth so grete entrechaunginges of thynges So
that anoyos peyne pat sholde dwwelly punyssh felouns punyssh
20 *Innocentes* *and* foolk of wykkede maneres sytten in heere chayres /
And anoyinge foolk treden *and* pat vnryhtfully oon þ^e nekkes of
hooly men / *and* vertu clere shynyng naturely is hid in dirke
derkenesses / *and* the ryhtful man bereth the blame / *and* the peyne
24 of þ^e feloun / Ne forsweryng / ne the fraude couered *and* kembd
with a fals coloure ne anoyeth nat^t to shrewes / the weche shrewes
wan hem lust to vsen here strengthe / thei reioysen hem to puttyn
vndyr hem / the souereyne kynges / weche pat poeple *with*-howtyn
28 *Nowmbyr* dredyn / O tow what so euer þou be pat knytttest alle
bondes of thynges / looke on this wrecchede Erthes / we men pat
ben nat A fowle partye / but A fayre partye of so grete werk^t / we ben
tormentyd in this see of fortune / Thow *gouernour* withdrawh *and*
32 restryne thei rauesyng floodys / *and* fastne *and* ferme these erthes
stable / *with* thilke bonde by whiche thow *gouerneste* the heuene /
/ that is so large.

The fyfthe prose [*margin, leaf 27, back*]

WHan .I. hadde *with* continuel sorwe sobbed or borken
 owt^t these things she *with* hir chere pesyble *and*
 nothing^t amoeued *with* my compleyntes / seyde thus/
 /whan .I. say the *quod* she soriful *and* wepynge. .I. 4
 wyste anon that^t thou were a wrechche *and* exiled / but .I. wyste
 neuer how ferre thine exil was / yif thi tale nadde shewyd it me/ /but
 certes al be thou fer fro thy contre thou nart nat put^t owt of it^t / but
 thou hast^t fayled of thi wey *and* gon amys *and* yif thou hast leuere 8
 for to wene þat þow be put^t owt^t of thi contre/ /than hast thou put
 owt thi self / rather than any oþer wyht hath // For no wyht¹ But
 thy self² ne myhte neuer han don þat to the For yif thou remembre
 of what contre thou art bōrn/ /It nis nat gouernyd by emperours / 12
 ne by gouernement of multitude / as weren the contres of athenes/
 /but oo lord *and* oo kyng / *and* þat is god þat is lord of thi contre /
 whiche that^t reyloiset hym of the dwellyng of hise Cytensis / And
 nat for to put hem in exil. // Of the whiche lord it ys a souerayne 16
 fredom to ben gouernyd by the brydul of hym / *and* obeye to hys
 Iustyce / hasthow foryetyn thylke ryht olde lawe of thi Cite / In
 the weche cyte yt ys ordeyned *and* establysshed / þat what^t whyht^t
 þat hath leuer fownden there-in hys sete or his hows than ellys were 20
 he may nat be exiled by no ryht from that^t place/ /For who so þat
 is contyned in *with* the palyis *and* the clos of thilke Cite / ther nis
 no drede þat he may desserue to ben exiled / but who so þat leteth
 the wyl for to enhabyte there / he for-leteth also to deserue to ben 24
 Cytesein of thilke cyte/ /So þat .I. sey þat the fate² of this place ne
 moueth me nat^t so mochel as thine owne fate / Ne .I. axe nat rather
 the walles of thi lybrarye aparayled *and* wrowht^t *with* yuory *and*
with glas / than after the sete of thy thowht^t // In wyche .I. put nat^t 28
 whilom bookes / but I. put þat that makeþ boekys worthi of prys / or
 presyous / þat ys to seyn the sentense of my bookes/ /And certeynly of
 thy desertes bystowyd in comune good / thou hast seyde soth but
 after the multitude of thi goode dedes / thou hast seyde fewe/ /And 32
 of the honeste or of the falsnesse of thinges that ben aposyd ayeins

¹ leaf 28.

² gloss i. manere.

the Thow hast remenbryd thinges þat ben knowyn to alle foolkt /
and of the felonyes *and* fraudes of thine Acusours / it semeth the
 haue .I.-twoched it forsotlie ryhtfully *and* shortly / Al myhten tho
 4 same thinges betere *and* moore plentevously ben cowth in the
 mowltth of the poeple þat knoweth al this // Thow hast ek blamed
 gretly *and* compleynynd / of the wrongful dede of the senat / *and*
 thow hast sorwed for my blame / And thow hast wopen for the
 8 damage of thi renoun þat is apayred / And thi last sorwe eschaufede
 ayeins fortune *and* compleynest¹ þat Gerdouns ne ben euenelyche
 yolden to þe desertes of foolkes // And in þe² latere ende of thi² woode
 muse thow preyedest þat thilke pees þat gouerneth þe^e heuene /
 12 sholde gouerne the erthe / but for þat manye trybulasyouns of
 affeccyouns han assayled the / *and* sorwe *and* ire *and* wepyng to
 drawen the diuersely as thow art now feeble of thowht / myhtyere
 remedies ne shullen nat yit thowchyn the / For which we wol vsen
 16 somdel lyhtere medycynes / So þat thilke passyuñs þat ben woxen
 hard in swellynge by perturbasyouns / fflowyng in to thi thowht /
 Mowen wexen esy *and* softe to reseyuen the strengthe of a more
 myhty *and* moore egre medycene by an esyere towchyng

¶ The sixte metur [margin, leaf 29]

20 **W**An þat the heuy sterre of þe cankyr eschaufeth by the
 beemes of phebus / þat ys to seyn / wan þat phebus the
 sonne ys in the sygne of the cankyr / wo so yeueth
 thanne largely hise seedes to the feeldes þat refusen to
 24 Reseyue hem³ / lat hym gon bygyled of trust þat he hadde to hys
 corn / to Accornes of Okes / yif thow wolt gadery vyolettes / ne
 go thow nat to the purpure wode / wan the feeld chyrkyng
 agryseth of coolde / by the felnesses of the wynde þat hyhte
 28 Aquylon / yif thow desyrest or wolt vsen grapes ne seke thow nat
 with a glotonos hond to stryne *and* presse the stalkes of the vyne
 in the ferst somer sesoun / For bachus the god of wyne hath rather
 yeuyn hise yiftes to Autumpne / the latyr ende of somer. // God
 32 tokneth *and* assygneth the tymes ablinge hem to heere propres offices
 / ne he ne suffreth nat / the stowndes whiche þat hym self hath

¹ leaf 28, back.

² gloss .s. sementis.

³ gloss .s. corn.

deuyded *and* constreyned to ben .I.-medled to gydere / And forth
he þat forleteth certeyn ordinaunce of doynge by ouerthrowynge
wey / he ne hath no glade issw or ende of hys werkes.

¶ The syxte prose [*margin, leaf 31*]

FYrst woltow suffre me to towche *and* Assaye the estat^t of thi 4
thowht^t by a fewe demaundes // So þat .I. may vndirstonde
what be the manere of thi curacionⁿ / Axe me *quod* .I. at
thi wille what thou wolt^t / *and* .I. shal answer^e / /tho
seyde she thus / wheyther weenesthou *quod* she that this world be 8
gouerned by foolyssh happes & fortunows / or elles þat ther be in it
any gouernement of Resoun / /Certes *quod* .I. / .I. ne trowe nat^t in
no manere þat so certeyn thinges / sholden be moeued by fortunows
fortune // But .I. woot wel þat god makere *and* mayster is gouernor 12
of his werk^t / /Ne neuer nas yit day þat myhte put me owt of the
sothnesse of þat sentence // So is it *quod* she / for the same thinge
songe thou a lytul her byforⁿ / *and* by-wey-ledest *and* by-weptest /
þat onoly men weren put owt^t of the cure of god / ffor of alle 16
oether thinges / thou ne dowtedest nat þat they nere gouerned by
resoun / /But ow^h / .I. wondre gretly certes whi þat thou art^t syk^t /
syn þat thou art put in so holsom a sentence / but lat vs sekyn
deppere .I. coniecte that ther lacketh .I. not nere what^t / /But sey 20
me this / syn þat thou ne dowtest nat^t that þis world be gouerned
by god / *with* whichⁿ gouernayles takestow heede þat is gouerned //
Vn²nethe *quod* .I. knowe .I. the sentense of thi questionⁿ / so þat .I.
ne may 3yt Answeren to thi demaundes // .I. nas nat desseyued *quod* 24
she þat ther ne fayleth som what / by whiche the maledye of thi
perturbacyonⁿ is krept in to thi thowt / so as the strengthe of þe
palys chynyng is opyn / But sey me this / remembres thou what is
the ende of thinges / *and* whider þat the entensynⁿ of alle kynde 28
tendeth // .I. haue herd yt toold som tyme *quod* .I. / but
drerynesse hath dulled my memoyre / /Certes *quod* she thou woost
wel / whennes þat alle thinges ben comyn *and* procedeth / .I. woot
wel *quod* .I. *and* Answerede þat God ys bygynny[n]g of alle // And 32

¹ *gloss.*: .i. pape, [*παπαι*, an exclamation].

² leaf 31, back.

how may this be *quod* she / that syn thow knowest^t the bygynnyng
 of thinges / þat thow ne knowest nat what is the ende of thinges /
 / But swiche ben the customys of *pertubaciouns* / And this power
 4 they han þat þey may moeue a man owt of his place / þat is to seyn
 fro the stableness *and* *perfeccyoun* of his knowyng // But certes
 thei may nat al arrace hym ne alyene hym in al / but .I. wolde þat
 thow woldest *Answer* to this / *Remenbrethow* þat þou art a man /
 8 Boece whi sholde .I. nat remembre þat *quod* .I. / *Philisophye* //
 Maysthow nat telle me þanne *quod* she what thinge is a man /
 Axestow me nat *quod* .I. whether þat .I. be A resonable mortal beest /
 I. woot wel *and* .I. confesse wel þat .I. am it // *wystesthow* neuer
 12 yit þat thow were any other thinge *quod* she / no *quod* .I. / *now*
 woot .I. *quod* she oother cause of thi maledye *and* þat ryht grete //
 Thow hast left forto knowen thi self what thow art / thorw whiche
 .I. haue pleyntly fwonde the cause of thi maledye / or elles the entre
 16 of recoueringe of thin heele // ffor whi for thow art confwndyd
with foryeetyng of thi self / ffor-thy sorwistow þat thow art exilyd
 of thi propre goodys / And for thow ne wost^t what is the ende
 of thinges / ffor-thy domesthow þat felonos *and* wykkyd men
 20 ben myhty *and* weleful / And for thow ast foryeeten by whiche
 gouernement the world is gouerned // ffor-thi wenestow þat þise
Mutacyouns of fortune fletyn *with-owte* gouernor / *These* ben grete
 causes nat oonly to Maledye / but certes grete causes to thi deth / but
 24 .I. thanke the ¹Auctor *and* the makere of heele þat nature hath
 nat alle for-letyn the / I haue grete norysynges of thin heele //
 And þat ys the sothe sentense of gouernaunce of the worlde / þat
 thow byleeuest þat the gouernynge of it^t nis nat subiect ne vndyr-
 28 putte to þe folie of these happes Auentros / but the resoun of God /
and ther-for dowte the nothinge / for of / this lytul sparke / thin heto
 of lyf shal shyne / *But* for as meche as it is nat tyme yit of fastere
 remedies / And the nature of thowhtes desseyued is this // that as ofte
 32 as they casten Away sothe opyniouns / thei clothen hem in false
 opynyouns / of which false opyniouns the dirkenesse of *perturba* wexit
 vp / þat confwndeth the verray insyhte / *And* þat dirkenesse shal

.I. assaye som-what / to maken thinne and wayk by lyhte *and*
Meenelyche remedies / So þat after that þat the dirkenesse of
desseyuynge desiringes is don a-wey / thow mowe knowe the
shynyng of verray lyht 4

¶ The seuende Metyr [*margin, leaf 32, back*]

THe sterres couered with blake clowdes ne mowen yeten a
doun no lyht / yif the trowble wynde þat hyht Auster /
turnyngt *and* waluyng the see medleth the hete þat is to
seyn the boylunge up fro the botme / the wawes þat whilom 8
weeren cleere as glas / And lyk to þe fayre cleere dayes *and* brihte
withstand anon the syhtes of men / by the fylthe *and* ordure þat is
resoluyd / And the fletyng strem þat Royleth down diuersly / ffro
hy mountaynes is arested *and* resisted ofte tyme by the encoun- 12
trynge of A stoon / þat is departyd *and* fallyn fram som Roche / And
for-thi yif thow wolt lookyn / And deemen soth / with cleer lyht /
And holden the wey with a ryht paath / weyue thow Ioye // dryf fro
the drede / fleme thow hoope / ne lat no sorwe aproche / that is to 16
seyn / lat non of thise iiij passyouns ouercomen the or blende the /
for clowdy *and* dirke is thilke thowt *and* bownde with brydles /
were as thise thinges reyngnen /

Explicit liber primus
Incipit secundus liber.

[BOOK II.]

¶ The fyrst prose [*margin, leaf 34, back*]

Afftyr this she stynte a lytul / And after þat .I. hadde 20
gadered by atempre stillnesse myn atencioun // she seyde
thus / as who so myht seyn thus / after thise thinges
she stynte a lytul / And whan she aperseyuyd by
atempre styllnesse / þat .I. was ententyf to herkene here / she 24
bygan to speke in this whise // yif .I. quod she haue vndyrstondyn
and knowen owtrely the causes *and* the habyt of thi maledye / thow

languyssel *and* art defeted for desire *and* talent of thi rather fortune /
 she þat ilke fortune oonly þat is changed as thow feynest to þe
 ward / hath peruertyd the clernesse *and* the estat of thi corage / .I.
 4 vndirstonde the feele fold colours *and* deceytes of thilke meruayles
 Monstre fortune / And how she vseth ful flaterynge famylaryte *with*
 hem that she enforseth to by-gyle / So longe tyl þat she confounde
 8 *with* onsufferabele sorwe hem / that she hath left in dyspeyre vnpur-
 ueyed / And yif thow remenbrest wel the kynde / the maneres And
 the desert of thilke fortune / thow shalt wel knowe / þat as in hir
 thow neuere ne haddest / ne hast. yloost any fayr thinge // but as .I.
 trowe .I. shal nat gretly travaylen to do the remembre on these thinges /
 12 for thow weere wont to hurtelyn *and* despysen hir *with* manly
 wordes / wan she blawndyssyng *and* present / And purswedest hir
with sentenses / þat weren drawn owte of myn entre / þat is to sayn /
 of myn enformasyoun / but no sodeyn mutacyon / ne bytydeth nat
 16 *with*-owte a manere chaungyng of corages / And so is it byfallyn þat
 thow art a lytel departyd fro the pes of thi thought // but now
 is tyme þat thow drynke *and* ataast some softe *and* delitable thinges /
 so þat wan þey ben entred *with*-in the / it mowe maken wey to
 20 strengere drynkes of medicines / ¹ Com now forth therfore the
 suacyon of swetenesse Rethoryen / whiche þat goth oonly the ryht
 wey / whil she forsakyth nat myne estatutes / And *with* rethorice
 com forth Musyce A damysel of oure hows / þat syngeth now lyhtere
 24 moedes or probasyons now heuyere // what eyleth the man what is
 it þat hath cast the in to mornynge *and* into wepyng / .I. trowe
 þat thow hast seyn som newe thinge *and* vnkowth // thow weenest
 þat fortune be chaungyd ayein the / but thow weenes wrong yif
 28 thow that weene / Alwey tho ben hir maneres / she hath rather kept
 as to þe wrard / hir propre stabynesse standeth in the chaunyng of
 hir self / Ryht swich was she wan she flateryd the *and* desseyued
 the / *with* vnlefful lykynges of fals welfulnesse // thow hast now
 32 knowyn *and* ataynt the doughtous or dowble vysage of thilke blynde
 goddesse fortune / she þat yit coueryht *and* wymplyth hir to oother
 foolkes / hat shewed hir euerydel to the / yif thow aprouest hir *and*

thinkest þat she is god / vse hir maneres / *and* pleyne the nat^t / And
 yif thow agrysyst hyr false trecherye / despyse *and* cast a-way hir
 þat pleyyth so harmfully // ffor she þat is now cause of so mochel
 sorwe to the . sholde ben cause to the of pes *and* of Ioye // she hath 4
 forsakyn the forsothe / the whiche þat neuer man may ben sykyr þat
 she ne shal forsake hym / *Glose* / But natheles some bookes han
 the texte thus // fforsothe she hath forsakyn the / ne ther nis no
 man sykyr þat she ne hath nat forsake // holdestow thanne thilke wele- 8
 fulnesse presyes to the þat shal passen / And is present^t fortune dere-
 worthe to the / which þat nis nat feythfulle for to dwelle / *and* wan
 she goth away þat she bryngeth a wiht in sorwe / for syn she may
 nat ben whitholden at a mannys wille / she maketh hym a wrecche 12
 wan she departyth fro hym / what oother thinge is flyttygne fortune /
 but^t a manere shewynge of wrecchydnesse þat is to comyn // ne it ne
 suffiseth nat oonly to lokyn on thyng þat is present^t by-forn the
 eyen of a man / but wysdom loeketh *and* amasureth the ende of 16
 thinges / And the same chaungynge fram oon in to A nother / þat is
 to seyn from Aduersite into pros¹perite / Maketh / þat the manesses of
 fortune ne ben nat^t for to dreden / ne the flaterynge of hir to ben
 desired // thus at the laste yt by-houeth the / to suffren wit euene 20
 wylle / in paciense / Al þat is don in *with* the floor of fortune /
 þat is to seyn / in this world Syn thow hast ones put thi necke
 vndyr þ^e yok^t of hir / ffor yif thow welt^t wryten a lawe of wen-
 dyng *and* of dwellyng to fortune which þat thow hast chosyn 24
 freely to ben thi ladye / Artow nat wrongful in þat / *and* makest^t
 fortune wroth *and* Aspere by thine in-paciencie / And yit þou mayst
 nat^t chaunge hyr // yif thow commyttest *and* bytakest thi sayles to
 the wynde / thow shalt be shouen nat^t thedyr þat thow woldest but^t 28
 whedyr þat þe wynde showueth the / yif thow castest thi sedes in
 to the feeldes thow sholdest han in mynde þat the yeres ben
 Amonges / owther wyle plenteuos *and* oþer while barayne / thow
 hast by-taken thiself to the gouernaunce of fortune / And forthi yt 32
 be-houeth the to ben obeysaunt to the maneres of thi lady / En-
 forcest thow the to Aresten or *with*-holden the swyftnesse *and* the

swey₃ of hir turnynge wheel/ /O thow fool of alle mortal fooles /
yif fortune by-gan to dwelle stable she cesede thanne to ben fortune.

¶ The fyrst metur [*margin, leaf 36*]

4 **W**An þat fortune with a prowde Ryht Hand hath torned hir
chaungynge stowndes / she farith lik the maneres of
the boylinge Eurippe/ /Glosa // Eurippe is an arm
of the see that ebbyth *and* floweth / *and* som tyme
the strem is on o syde *and* som tyme on þ^e oþer/ /Texte // she crwel
8 fortune casteth adown kynges þat whilom weren / ydrad / And she
deceyuable enhanseth vp the Vmble cheere of hym þat is descounfited
// Ne she neyther heeryth ne rekkeþ of wrecchede wepynges / *and* she
is so hard þat she lyssheth *and* scorneth the wepynges of hem the
12 whiche she hath makyd wepe with hir free wille / Thus she pleyeth
and thus she proeueth hir strengthes / And sheweth a grete wondyr
to alle hir seruauntes yif þat a whiht is seyn weleful / And ouer-
throwe in an houre

¶ The secunde prose [*margin, leaf 37*]

16 **C**ertes .I. wolde pleten with the a fewe thynges vsinge the
wordys of fortune / tak hede now thy self / yif þat she axeth
1 Ryht/ /O thow man werfore makes thow me gylty by
thyne euery dayes playnynges / what wronge haue .I. don
20 the // what goodes haue .I. byrest the þat weeren thyne/ /Stryf or
pleten wyt me by-forn what Iuge þat thow wolt of the possessyoun
of Rychesses or of dignitees/ /And yif thow mayst shewyn me / þat
euere any mortal man hath reseuyd any of tho thynges to ben hise
24 in propre / than wol .I. graunte frely þat alle thykke thynges weeren
thyne / whiche that thow axest / wan þat nature browht the forth
owt of thi modyr wombe / .I. resseyuyd the naked *and* nedy of alle
things / *and* .I. noryssede the with my Rychesses *and* was redy *and*
28 ententyf thorw my fauor to susteyne the / And þat makeþ the now
inpacyent ayeins me/ /And .I. enuyrounde the with alle the Aboun-
daunce *and* shynynge of alle goodes þat ben in my ryht / now it
lyketh me to withdrawen myn hand // thow hast had grace as he þat

vsed of foreyne goodes / thow hast no ryht^t to pleyne the as thowgh
 thow haddyst outrelly for-lorn alle thi thinges // whey pleynesthow
 thanne / .I. haue don the no wrong^t / Rychesses honours *and* swyche
 other thinges ben of my ryht^t / My *seruauntus* knowen me for hyr 4
 lady / they comyn *with* me *and* departen wan .I. wende .I. dar wel
 affermen hardly þat yif tho thinges of whiche thow pleynest þat
 thow hast forlorn hadde ben thyne / thow ne haddyst nat lorn hem /
 / .I. shal thanne oonly ben deffendyd to vsen my Ryht^t / /Certes 8
 it ys leueful to the heuene to make cleere dayes / *and* after þat to
 cocueryn tho same dayes *with* dirk nyhtes // the yer hath ek leue to
 apayrellyn the visage of the erthe now *with* flowres *and* now *with*
 frut / *and* to confownden hem som tyme *with* reynes *and* *with* coldes/ 12
 /The see hath ek his ryht^t to ben som tyme kalm *and* blawndyssynge
with smothe water and som tyme to ben horrible *with* wawes *and*
 tempestes / But the couetyse of men þat may nat ben stanchèd /
 shal it bynde me to ben stidefast / syn þat stidefastnesse is vnkowth 16
 to my maneres / swych is my strengthe *and* this pley .I. pleye con-
 tinuely / .I. torne the whirlynge wheel *with* the tornynge cercle /
 .I. am glad to chaungynⁿ ¹the lowest to the heyest / And the heyist to
 the lowest // Worth vp yif thow wolt^t so it be by this lawe / that 20
 thow ne holde nat þat^t .I. do the wronge / thogh thow dessende
 adoun wan the resoun of my pley axeth it / /wistesthow nat^t how
 cresus the kyng^t of lydyens of whiche kyng^t Cyrus was ful sore agast /
 a lytul by-forn þat this rewlyche cresus was kawth of Cyrus *and* 24
 lad to the fyr to ben brent^t / but þat a rayn dessendede down fro
 heuene þat rescowede hym / /And is yt owt of thi mynde / how þat
 pawlus consul of Rome / wan he hadde takyn þe kyng of pereyens /
 weep pitowsly / for the kapteuite of the self kyng^e // what other 28
 thinge by-waylen the cryenges of tragedyes / but oonly the dedes of
 fortune / þat *with* a vnwarstroke ouertorneth realmes of grete noblye/
 /Glose/ /Tragedye is to seyn / a dite of a prosperite for a tyme
 þat endith in wrecchydnesse // lernedest nat thow in greke wan thow 32
 weere yonge / þat in the entre or in the celere of Iubyter ther ben
 towched two tonnes þat on is ful of good þat oother is ful of harm /

/what ryht hasthow to pleyne / yif thow hast takyn more plente-
 usoly of the goode syde þat is to seyn of my Rychesses *and prosperites*/
 /And what ek yif .I. ne be nat^r al departyd fro the // what ek yif
 4 my mutabylyte yeueth the ryhtful cause of hope to han yit betere
 thinges/ /Natheles dysmaye the nat^r in thi thought/ /And thow þat
 art put^r in the comune Realme of alle / ne desire nat to lyuen by thin
 oonly propre ryht^r

the secunde metur [*margin, leaf 38, back*]

8 **T**Howgh plente þat is Goddesse of Rychesses hielde a-down
with ful horn / And *with*draweth nat hir hand / as many
 Rychesses as the see torneth vpward sandes wan yt^r ys
 moeued *with* rauyssynge blastes/ /Or elles as many
 12 rychesses as ther shynyn bryhte sterres in heuene on the sterry nyhtes /
 yit for al þat mankynde nolde nat^r cese to wepe wrechede plentes/
 /And al be it^r so þat god resseyueth gladly hir preyres / *and* yeueth
 hem as fool large meche gold / And Aparayleth coueytos men *with*
 16 noble or cleere honours // yit semeth hem hauen .I.-getyn nothinge
 but alwey hir crewel rauyne deuowrynge al that thei han getyn /
 sheweth oother gapynges / þat is to seyn / gapen *and* desyren yit^r
 after mo rychesses/. /what brydlis myhtten wyt^r-holden to any cer-
 20 teyn ende the desordene couetyse of men / wan euer the rather þat it
 fleteth ¹In large yiftes / the more ay brenneth in Hem the thirst
 of hauynge/ /Certes he þat quakyng *and* dredful weneth hym
 seluen nedy / he ne leueth neuer more ryche

¶ The thrydde prose [*margin, leaf 40*]

24 **T**Her-for yif þat fortune spake *with* the for hir self in this
 manere / forsothe thow ne haddyst nat^r / what thow myhtest
 answere/ /And yif thow hast Any thinge / wher-*with* thow
 mayst^r ryht^r fully defendyn thy compleynt^r / it by-houeth
 28 the to shewyn yt^r / And .I. wol yeuyn the spase to tellyn it/ /Cer-
 teinly *quod* .I. thanne / thise bet^r fayre thinges / And enoynted *with*
 hony swetenesse of Rethorike *and* Musyke / And oonly whil thei ben
 herd / they ben dyllysyos // but to wreches is a deppere feelynge of

harm / this is to seyn / þat wrecches feelyn the harmes / that they
suffren more greuously / than the remedies or the delytes of these
wordes mowen gladyne or comforten hem / So þat wan these things
stynten forto sowne in eres / the ¹sorwe þat is inset¹ greueth the 4
thowght/ / Ryht so is it *quod* she / for these ne ben yit none remedies
of thi maledye / but they ben A manere noryssynges of thi sorwes
yit rebel ayein thi curacion // ffor wan þat tyme is / .I. shal moeue
swych things þat percen hem self depe/ /but¹ natheles þat thow 8
shalt nat wylne to leten thi self a wrecche // hasthow foryeten
the nowmber and the manere of thi welefulnesse // I. hoolde me
style how þat the souerane men of the Cyte tokyn the in cure *and*
kepyng / wan thow weere orphelyn of fadyr *and* modyr / And 12
weere chosen in Affynite of prynses of the cyte / And thow be-
gunne rather to be leef *and* deere / than for to ben A neyssshebour/
/ the whiche thing¹ is the moost *presyous* kynde of any propinquite
or alyaunce þat may ben // who is it¹ þat ne seyde tho þat thow 16
were ryht¹ weleful / *with* so grete A nobleye of thi fadyris in lawe
and with the castete of thi wyf / And *with* the oportunitie *and*
noblesse of thi masculyn chyldren þat is to seyn / thi sones /
And ouer al this me lyste to passen the comune things / how thow 20
haddyst in thi yowthe dygnites / þat weren werned to oolde men //
but it delyteth me to comen now to the Syngler / vp-hepyng of thi
welefulnesse/ /yif any frute of mortal things may han any weyhte
or *pris* of welefulnesse / myhtesthow euer for-yetyn for any charge 24
of harm þat myhte befall / the remembraunce of thilke day / þat thow
saye thi two sones makyd *conseileres* / *and* .I.-lad togedere fro thin
hows vndur so gret A semble of senatoures *and* vndyr the blythenesse
of peple/ /And whan thow saye hem set in the court in heere 28
chayeres of dygnitees / thow Rethoryen or *pronouncere* of kynges
preysynges desseruedyst glorie of wit *and* of Eloquence / wan thow
syttynge by-twyen thy two sones conseyleres in the place / þat hihte
circo / And fulfyldest the Abydyng of the multitude of poeple þat 32
was sprad a-bowten the *with* so large preysynge *and* laude / as men
syngen / in victories/ /tho yaue thow wordes to fortune as .I. trowe /

¹ leaf 40, back.

þat is to seyn / tho feffedest thou fortune *with* glosynge wordes /
 And desseyuedest hir / wan she acoyede the *and* noryssede the / as hir
 owne delycles // thou bar away of fortune a yifte / þat is to seyn /
 4 swich gerdoun þat she neuer yaf to pryue man / wil'thou therfor
 lye a Rekenynge *with* fortune // she hath now twynceled fyrst vp on
 the / *with* wyckede eye / yif thou consydere the nowmbre *and* the
 manere of thy blysse *and* of thy sorwes / thou mayst nat forsakyn
 8 þat thou art yit blysseful / ffor yif thou therfor weenest thiself
 nat weleful / for thynges þat the semeden Ioyful ben passed / *and*
 ther nis nat whi thou sholdest weene thy self A wrecche / for thynges
 þat semen now sorye passen also / Arthow now comen fyrst A sodeyn
 12 gest in to the shadwe or tabernacle of this lyf / or trowesthou þat
 any stedefastnesse be in mannes thynges / whan ofte a swyft howre
 dyssoluede the same man / þat is to seyn whan the sowle departeth
 fro the body // ffor al þat though þat zelde is ther any feith þat
 16 fortune thynges wolen dwellyn / yit natheles the laste day of A man-
 ys lif ys a manere deth to fortune And also to thilke þat hath dwelt /
and therfor what weenestow dar recke / yif thou forlete hyr in
 deyinge or elles þat she fortune forlete the in fleyng away /

¶ The iii Metur [*margin, leaf 41, back*]

20 **W**Han phebus the sonne bygynneth to spredyn hyr cleer-
 nesse *with* rosene charyettes thanne the sterre ydym-
 myd / palyt here white cheeres / by the flambes of
 the sonne þat ouercometh the sterre lyht / this is to
 24 seyn / wan the sonne is rysyn / the day sterre wexeth paale / *and*
 leseth hir lyht / for the grete bryhtnesse of the sonne / wan the
 wode wexeth rody of rosyn flowres in the fyrst somer seson thorw
 the brethe of the wynde zepherus / that wexeth warm / yif the
 28 cloudy wynde auster / blowe fellyche / than goth away the fayre-
 nesse of thornesse // ofte the see is cleer *and* kalm *with*-howte
 moeuyng floedes / *and* ofte the horyble wynd aquilon / moeueþ
 boylynge tempestes *and* ouer-welneeth the see / 3if the forme of this
 32 worlde is so 3eelde stable And yif yt turneth by so manye entre-

chaungynges/ /wolphow thanne trusten in the towmblynge for-
tunes of men // wolthow trowen on flettynge goodes / is it certeyn *and*
establyssed by lawe perdurable þat nothinge þat is engendred nys
stedefast ne estable 4

¶ The ferthe prose [*margin, leaf 44*]

THan seyde .I. thus / O notice of alle vertuus thow seyst ful
soth // Ne .I. ne may nat for-sake the ryht swyfte cours of
my prosperite // þat is to seyn þat prosperite ne be comen
to me wondyr swyfly *and* sone // but this is thinge þat 8
gretely smerteth me / whan yt remenbryth me // ffor in alle Aduersyte
of fortune the mooste vnzely kynde ¹of contrarios fortune is to han
ben weleful / But þat thow *quod* she abyest thus the tormentus² of thi
false opynion / þat maysthow nat ryhfully blamen ne Aretten to 12
thinges / as who seyh / ffor thow hast yit many habūdaunce of
thinges/ /Texte // ffor al be yt so þat the ydel name of auenturos
welefulnesse moeueth the now / it ys leefful þat thow rekne *with*
me of how manye grete thinges thow hast yit plente / And therfor 16
yif þat thilke thinge / þat thow haddest for moost presyous in
al thi rychesse of fortune / be kept to the yit by the grace of
god vnwemmed *and* vndefowled / maysthow thanne pleyne ryhtfully
vp-on the meschef of fortune / syn thow hast yit thy beste thinges/ 20
/Certes yit leueth in good poynt thilke presious honour of man-
kynde / Symacus thi wyues fadyr / which þat is a man maked alle
of sapyence *and* vertu / the wyche man thow woldest byen Redely /
with the pris of thin owne lyf // he be-wayleth the-wronges þat men 24
don to the / *and* nat for hym self for he leueth in sykernesse of any
sentences put ayeins hym/ /And yit lyuyth thy wyf þat is a-tempre
of wyt *and* passyngge oother wymmen in clennessse of chastete/ /And
for .I. wol closen shortely hyr bowntes / she is lik to hir fadyr / .I. 28
telle the wel þat she lyueth loth of this lyf / And keepith to the
oonly hir goost / And is al maad *and* ouerkomen by wepyng *and*
sorwe for desyr of the / in the weche thinge oonly .I. moot graunten
þat thi welefulness is amenyssed // what shal .I. seyn ek of thi two 32

¹ leaf 44, back.

² MS. torment₃, as phebe₃; for phebus. But 3 = also z *and* gh.

sones conseylours of whiche as of chyldren of hir age ther shyneth
 the lyknesse of the wyt of hir fadyr or of hir eldyr fadyr // And
 syn the soueryn cure of alle mortel folk/ is to sauē hir owen lyues/
 4 /O how weleful arthow yif thow knowe thy goodes / for yit ben
 ther thinges dwellyd to the ward / þat no man dowlth than they ne
 ben more dereworthe to the / than thin owen lyf/ /And for thy /
 drye thy teeres for yit nis nat euerych fortune al hateful to the ward /
 8 ne ouer gret tempest hath nat yit fallen vpon the // wan þat thyne
 aneres cleuen faste / þat neyther wolen suffren the counfort of this
 tyme present / ne the hope of tyme comynge to passen ne to faylen
 1 And .I. preye quod .I. þat faste moten they halden / for whyles that
 12 they halden / how so euer þat thinges ben / .I. shal wel fleetyn forth
 and escapin / but thow mayste wel sen how grete Aparayles and aray
 þat me lakketh þat ben passed away fro me/ / .I. haue som what
 auaunsed and forthered the quod she / yif þat thow anoye nat or for-
 16 thinke nat of al thi fortune / As who seyth .I. haue som what confortd
 the so þat thow tempest the nat thus with al thi fortune syn thow hast
 yit thi beste thinges // but .I. may nat suffren thi delites / þat pleynest
 so wepyngē and angwissos for þat ther lacketh som what to thi weleful-
 20 nesse/ /ffor what man is so sad or of so parfyt welefulness / þat he
 ne struyth and pleyneth on som halue ayen þ^e qualite of his estat /
 for why / ful angwissos thing is the con lysiō of mannes goodes / for
 eyther it comth nat al to-gydere to a wyht / or ellis yt last nat perpe-
 24 tuel // ffor sum man hath grete Rycheses / but he is a-shamyd of his
 Vngentel lynage / And som ys renowned of noblesse of kynrede /
 but he is enclosed in so grete Angwysse of nede of thinges / þat him
 weere leuere þat he weere vnknowe/ /And som man haboundith
 28 bothe in Rychesse and noblesse / but yit he bewayleth his caste lyf /
 for he ne hath no wyf / And som man is wel and zelyly ymaryed
 but he hat no chyldren / And noriseth hise Rycheses to the eyres of
 strange foolkys / And som man is gladyd with chyldren / but he
 32 weepeth ful sory for the trespace of his sone or of his dowgter / And
 for this þer nie acordyth no wyht lyhtly to the co[n]dyceō of his
 fortune // ffor alwey to euery man ther is in som what þat vn-assaied

he ne wot nat / or elles he dredith þat he hath asayed/ /And adde
this also / þat euery weleful man hath a ful delycat feelynge / so that
but yif alle thinges byfalle at his owne wyl / for he incapyent^r or is
nat vsed to han non Aduersyte / A-non he is throwen adoun / for 4
euery lytul thinge/ /And ful lytul thinges ben tho / þat withdrawn
the somme or the perfeccyon of blysfulnesse fro hem þat ben moost
fortunat^r // how many men trowesthow wolden demen hem self to ben
almost in heuene / yif they ¹myhten atayne to the leest party of the 8
remnau^{nt} of thi fortune/ /this same place þat thou clepyst exil / is
contre to hem þat enhabyten heere *and* forthi nothing^r wrecched but
whan thou weenest hyt / As ho seyth thou thy self ne no whyht elles
nis a wrechche / but whan he weneth hym self a wrechche by repu- 12
tasyn of his corage/ /And ayeinward / alle fortune is blysful to a
man / by the egreablete or by the egalyte of hym þat suffreth hyt^r //
what man is þat / that is so weleful þat nolde changen his estat /
what he hath lost pacience // the swetnesse of mannes welefulnesse is 16
sprayngd *with* many beternesses / the weche welefulnesse al though
it seme swete *and* Ioyful to hem þat vseth hyt / yit^r may yt nat^r ben
with-holden þat it ne goth away wan yt woole/ /Thanne is yt wel
sene / how wrecched is the blysfulnesse of mortal thinges / þat 20
neyther yt dureth perpetuel *with* hem that euery fortune resseyuen
agreably or egaly / ne it ne delyteth nat^r in al to hem þat ben
angwyssos / O ye mortal folk^r what seke 3e thanne blysfulnesse owt
of yowre self / whiche þat is put^r in yowre self / Erroure *and* folye 24
confowndeth yow / .I. shal shewe the shortely the poynt^r of souereyne
blysfulnesse/ /Is ther any thinge more *presyous* to the than thi self /
thou wolt Answere nay/ /Thanne yif hyt so be þat thou art myhty
ouer thi self / that is to seyn by tranquillite of thi sowle / than hast 28
thou thinge in thi power þat thou noldest neuer leesyn / ne fortune
may nat be-neme it the / And þat thou mayst knowe þat blyssefulnesse
ne may nat standen in thinges þat ben fortunous *and* temporel / now
vndyrstonde *and* gadere yt to-gidere thus // yif blysfulnesse be the 32
souereyn good of nature þat lyueth by resoun / ne thilke thinge nis
nat souereyn good þat may be taken away in any wyse / for more

worthi thinge *and* more digne is thilke thinge þat may nat ben take
 away // than sheweth yt wel þat the vnstabilnesse of fortune may
 nat atayne to resseyuen verray blyfulnessse / And yit more ouer. /
 4 what man that this towmblynge wefulnessse ledith / eyther he woot
 þat it is chaungeable / or elles he woot hyt nat / And yif he ¹wot it
 nat / what blyful fortune may ther ben in the blyndnesse of ignor-
 ance/ /And yif he wot þat it ys chaungeable / he moot alwey ben
 8 adrad þat he ne lese þat thinge þat he ne dowlth nat but þat he may
 leesyn hyt / As who seyth he mot ben alway agast list he leese þat
 he wot wel he may leese it // for which the continuel drede þat he
 hath ne suffreth hym nat to ben weleful / Or yif he leese it / he
 12 weneth to be dyspysed *and* forletyn/ /Certes ek þat is a ful lytul
 good þat is born *with* euene herte whan yt is lost / þat is to seyn þat
 men do no more fors of the lost than of the hauynge / And for as
 meeche as thow þi self art he to whom yt hath ben shewed *and* proued
 16 by ful manye demonstracyouns as .I. wot wel / þat the sowles of men
 ne mowe nat deyen in no wise / And ek syn yt is cleerand certeyn /
 þat fortunous wefulnessse endith by the deth of the body / yt may
 nat ben dowed / þat yif þat deth may take a-way blyfulnessse þat
 20 alle the kynde of mortal thinges ne dessendeth in to wrecchednesse /
 by the ende of the deth/ /And syn we knowen wel þat many a man
 hath sowht the frut of blyfulnessse nat oonly *with* suffrynge of deth //
 but ek *with* suffrynge of peynes and tormentes/ /How myhte
 24 thanne this *present* lyf maken men blyful / syn þat whan thilke
 selue lyf is ended yt ne maketh folkes no wrecches /

¶ The ferthe metur [*margin, leaf 46, back*]

28 **W**Hat maner man stable And waar / þat wole fowndyn
 hym a perdurable sete / And ne wole nat ben cast
 down *with* the lowde blastes of the wynd eurus /
 And wole despyce the see manasyng *with* floodes //
 lat hym eschewen to bylde on the cop of the Mountayne / or in the
 moyste sandes / for the felle wynd auster tormenteth the cop² of the
 32 montayne / *with* alle hise strengthes / And the lavse sandes refusen
 to beren the heuy wyhte/ /And forthi 3if thow wolt fleen the

¹ leaf 46.

² ? MS may be top.

perylous auenture / þat is to seyn of the worlde / haue mynde
certeynely to fychchen thin hows of a merye site in A lowh stoon //
for al thowgh the wynde trowblynge the see / thondre *with* ouer-
throwynges/ /thow that art put in quiete *and* weleful by strengthe 4
of thi palys shalt leden ¹A cler age / Scornynge the woodnesses And
the Ires of the Eyr' //

¶ The fyfthe prose [*margin, leaf 49, back*]

BVt for as moche as the noryssinges of my resouns dessenden
now in to the / .I. trowe it weere tyme to vsen a lytel 8
strengere medycynes/ /Now vndyrstond heere al weere yt
so þat the yiftes of fortune ne weere nat brutel ne transi-
torye / what is ther in hem þat may ben thyn in any tyme // or
elles þat yt nis fowl / yif þat it be consyderyd and lokyd *perfytyly* // 12
Rychessis ben they *presyous* by the nature of hem self / or elles by
the nature of the/ /What is most worth of rychesses is nat gold / or
myht of moneye assembled/ /Certes thilke gold and thilke moneye
shyneth *and* yeueth betere renoun to hem þat despendyn it / thanne 16
to thilke folk' þat mokeren it' // ffor auarice maketh alwey mokereres
to ben hated/ /And largesse maketh folk cler of renoun // ffor syn
þat swich thinge as is transferred fram o man to a nother ne may nat
dwellyn *with* no man/ /Certes thanne is thilke moneye *precyous* 20
whan it is translated in to oother folkes² *and* stenteth to ben had / by
vsage of large yeuyng of hym þat hath yeuyn it'/ /And also yif al
the moneye that is *ouer* al in the worlde / weere gaderyd toward o
man / it sholde makyn alle oother men to ben ³nedy as of þat' // 24
And certes a voys þat is to seyn *with-owte* amenusyng fulfyllleth
to-gydere the heeryng of moche folk' // but certes yowre rychesses ne
mowen nat passen in to moche folk' ³*with* owte amenusyng And
whan they ben apassed / nedes they makyn hem poore þat for-gon 28
the rychesses/ /O streyte *and* nedy clepe .I. this rychesse / syn þat
many folk' ne may nat han yt' al / ne al may it nat' comyn to o man /
with-owten pouerte of alle other folk' / And the shynynge of gemmes
þat .I. clepe *presyous* stoones drawith it nat' the eyen of folk to hem 32

¹ leaf 47.² or folke.³ leaf 50.

ward / þat is to seyn for the beautes // but certes yif ther wecre
 beaute or bounte in the shynynge of stoness / thilke clernesse is of
 the stoness hem self / and nat of men / for which .I. wondre gretely
 4 þat men meruaylen on swyche thynges / for why / what thing^r is yt
 þat yif yt wanteth moeuynge and Ioyngture of sowle and body / þat
 by ryht myht semen a fayr creature to hym þat hath a sowle of
 resoun // ffor al be it so þat gemmes drawn to hem self a lytel of
 8 the last beaute of the world / thorw the entente of hir creatour /
 thorw the distinceon of hem self / yit for as mochel as they ben put
 vndyr yowre excellense / they ne han nat desseruyd by no wey þat
 ye sholden mervaylen on hem / And the beaute of felde delyteth yt
 12 nat mochel vn to yow / Boece / why sholde it nat delyten vs / syn
 þat it ys a ryht fayr porsyon of þ^e ryhte fayre werke þat is to seyn
 of this world / And ryht so ben we gladed som tyme of the face of
 the see whan yt is cler / And also merueylen we on the heuene /
 16 and on the sterres / And on the sonne and on the Moone / phylo-
 sophie / Aperteneth quod she any of thilke thynges to the / why
 darsthow gloryfyen the in the shynynge of any swyche thynges //
 Arthow distingwed and embelysed by the spryngynge flowres of the
 20 fyrst somer sesoun // or swellyth thy plente in the fructes of somer /
 / whi arthow rauyssed with ydel Ioyes / whi enbracest thow
 straunge goodes as they weeren thyne // fortune ne shal neuer
 makyn þat swyche thynges ben thyne þat nature of thynges hath
 24 makid foreyne fro the / Soth is þat with-owten dowte / the frutes
 of the Erthe owen to ben to the norysynge of bestys / And yif þou
 wolt fulfyllen thy nede after þat yt^r suffiseth to nature / than is yt no
 nede þat thow seke after the superflwite ¹Of fortune / ffor with ful
 28 fewe thynges And with ful lytel thynges nature halt hir^r apayed /
 And yif þou wolt achoken the fulfyllynge of nature with super-
 flwites Certes thilke thynges þat þou wolt thresten or powren in to
 nature shollen ben vnIoyful to the or elles anoyos // wenest^r thow ek
 32 þat yt be a fayre thing^r to shyne with diuerse clothinge / of which
 klothinge yif the beaute be agreable to loken vp-on / .I. wol
 mervaylen on the nature of the matere of thilke klothes / or elles on

the werkman þat wrowht hem/ /But also a longe Rowte of meyne /
makyth þat a blysfyl man / þ^e whiche *seruantus*² / yif they ben
visyous of condiciouns it is a gret charge *and* a distrucsyon to the
hows / And a gret enemy to the lord hym self/ /And yif they ben 4
goode men / how shal straunge or foreyne goodnesse ben put in þ^e
nowmbre of thi Rychesse/ /So þat by alle thyse forseide þinges it is
cleerly .I.-shewyd þat neuer oon of thilke thynges þat thow acount-
edest for thine goodes nas nat thi good / In the wyche thynges yif 8
ther be no beaute to ben desyred / why sholdesthow ben sory yif
thow leese hem / or why sholdesthow reioysen the to holden hem /
ffor yif they ben fayre of hyr owne kynde / what aperteneth that to
the / for al so wel sholden they han ben fayre by hem selue / 12
though they weeryn departed fram alle thyne rychesses // ffor why
fayre ne presyous ne weeren they nat for þat they comen amonge thy
Rychesses // but for they semeden fayre *and* presyous / ther-for thow
haddyst leuere rekne hem amonges thy Rychesses/ /But what 16
desires thow of fortune *with* so grete a noyse / *and with* so gret
a fare/ /.I. trowe thow seke to dryue a-wey nede *with* habund-
aunce of thynges / but certes it torneth to yow al in the contrarye
ffor why certes it nedeth of ful manye helpynges to kepyn the 20
diuersyte of presyos ostelementus/ /And soth it is þat of manye
thynges / han they nede þat many thynges han/ /And ayeinward of
lytul nedeth hem þat mesuren hir fille after the nede of kynde / *and*
nat after the owtrage of coueytise / Is it thanne so / þat ye men ne 24
han no propyr goode / I-set in yow // ffor whiche ye mcten sekyn
owtward yowre goodis in foreyne *and* subgyt thynges / So is thanne
the condysyñ of thynges torned vp so down / þat a man þat is
a deuine ²beest by meryte of his resoun / thinketh þat hym self nis 28
neyther fayre ne noble / but yif yt be thorw possessyon of ostel-
mentus þat ne han no sowles // And certes al oother thynges ben
apayed of hir owne beautes / But ye men þat ben semblable to God /
by yowre resonable thought desyren to a-payrelen yowre excellent 32
kynde of the lowest thynges // Ne ye vndyrstondyn nat how gret a

¹ MS *seruant*; : 3 is sometimes z initial and me lial (p. 34) as well as *us* and *gh* final.

² leaf 51.

wrongt ye don to yowre creatour / for he wolde þat mankynde were
most worthy *and* noble of any oothre wordly thinges/ /And ye
threste adown yowre dignitees by-nethe the lowest thinges/ /ffor yif
4 þat al þe good of euery thinge / be more presyos than ys thilke
thinge whos þat the good ys / syn ye demen þat tho fowlest thinges
ben yowre goodys // thanne submitten ye *and* putten yowre seluen
vndyr the fowleste thinges by yowre estimacion/ /And certes this
8 tydeth nat' *with*-owte yowre desertes / for certes swyche is the condy-
syon of alle man kynde / þat oonly whan yt hath knowynge of it selue /
than passeth it in noblesse alle oother thinges/ /And whan yt for-
leteth þe knowynge of it self / than is it browht by-nethen alle beestys
12 // for why al oother leuyng bestys han of kynde to knowe nat' hym-
self // but whan men letyn the knowynge of hem-self yt comth hem
of vice // but how brode shewyth the erroure And the folye of yow
men / þat wenen þat any thinge may ben aparayld with straunge
16 aparaylementus // but for sothe þat may nat ben doon/ /For yif a wyth
shyneth *with* thinges þat ben put to hym / as thus / yif thilke
thinges schynen *with* which a man is aparayled / certes thilke
thinges ben comendyd *and* preysed *with* whyche he is aparayld //
20 but natheles the thinge þat is coueryd *and* wrappyd vndyr þat
dwelleth in his felthe/ /And .I. denye þat thilke thinge be good þat
anoyeth hym þat hath it/ /Gabbe .I. of this / thow wolt seye nay //
Certes Rychesses han a-noyed ful ofte hem that han tho Rychesses //
24 syn þat euery wyckyd shrewe / and for hys wyckednesse the more gredy
Aftyr oother folkes Rychesses / wer so euer it be in any place / be it
gold or presyous stones/ /And wenyth hym only most worthi þat
hat hem // thow thanne þat so bysy dredist' now the swerd *and*
28 the spere // yif thow haddyst entred in the paath ¹of this lyf a
voyde wayferynge man / þan woldyst thow synge by-forn the thef /
as who seyth a pore man þat berth no Rychesse on hym / by the
weye / may boldely synge by-forn theues / for he hath nat' werof to
32 ben robbed / O precyos And ryht cler is the blysfulnesse of mortal
rychesses / þat whan thow hast getyn yt / than hast thow lorn thi
sikernesse

¹ leaf 51, back.

¶ The fyfthe metur [*margin, leaf 52*]

BLysful was the fyrst age of men // they heldyn hem apayed
/ *with* the metes þat the trewe feeldes browhten forth //
they ne dystroyede nor desseyuyd nat hem self *with*
owtrage // they weeren wont lythly to slakyn hyr hungyr 4
at euen *with* accornes of Okes/ /they ne cowde nat medly the yifte
of bachus to the cleer hony / þat is to seyn they cowde make no
pymment nor clarree / ne they cowde nat medle the bryhte fleezes of
the contre of Seryens / *with* the venym of tyrye // this is to 8
seyn they cowde nat deyen white flezes of syryen contre *with* the
blood of a manere shylliefyssh / þat men fynden in tyrye / *with*
whiche blood men deyen purpyr¹/ /they slepin holsom slepys
vp on the gras/ /And dronkyn of the rennyng wateres/ /And 12
layen vndyr the shadwes of the heye pyn trees/ /Ne no gest
ne straungere ne karue yit the heye see *with* oores / or *with*
shippes // Ne they ne hadde seyn yit none newe strondes to leden
marchaundyse ¹In-to diuerse contres/ /Tho weeryn þ^e crwel 16
claryouns ful hust *and* ful styлле // ne blod I-shad by egre hate ne
hadde nat deyed yit armures / for wertō / or whych wodnesse of
enemys wolde fyrst moeuen armes / whan they say crwel woundes ne
none meedes be of blod .I.-shad/ /.I. wolde þat owre tymes sholde 20
torne ayein to þ^e olde maneres // but þ^e angwissos loue of hauynge
brenneth in folk moore crwely than þ^e fyr of mowntaigne ethna /
þat ay brenneth/ /Allas what was he þat fyrst dalf vp the gobetes
or the weyhtes of gold couered vndyr erthe / And the presios stoones 24
þat woldyn han be hydd // he dalf vp presios perils / þat is to seyn
þat he þat hem fyrst vp dalf / dalf vp a presios peril / for whi for
the preciosnesse of swych thinge hath many man be in peril

¹ leaf 52, back.

Chawcer vp on this fyfte metur of the second book¹

- A** Blysfyl lyf a paysyble *and* a swete [The Former Age]
 ledden the poeples in the former age
 They helde hem paied of the fructes þat þey ete
 4 whiche þat the feldes yaue hem by vsage
 They ne weere nat forpampred *with* owtrage
 Onknowyn was þ^e quyerne *and* ek the melle
 They eten mast hawes *and* swych pownage
 8 And dronken water of the colde welle
- ¶ yit nas the grownd nat wounded *with* þ^e plowh
 but corn vp sprong vnsowe of mannes hond
 þe which they gnodded *and* eete nat half .I.-nowh
 12 ne man yit knewe the forwes of his lond
 no man the fyr owt of the flynt yit fonde
 Vn-koruen and vn-grobbed lay the vyne
 no man yit in the mortar spices grond
 16 to clarre ne to sawse of galentyne
- ¶ no Madyr welde or wod no litestere
 ne knewh / the fles was of is former hewe
 no flessch ne wyste offence of egge or spere
 20 no coyn ne knewh man which is fals or trewe
 no ship yit karf the wawes grene *and* blewe
 no Marchaunt yit ne fette owt-landiss^h ware
 no batails trompes for the werres folk ne knewe
 24 ne towres heye *and* walles rownde or square
- ¶ what sholde it han avayled to werreye
 ther lay no profyt ther was no rychesse
 But^t corsed was the tyme .I. dar' wel seye [leaf 53]
 28 þat men fyrst dede hir swety bysynesse
 to grobbe vp metal lurkyng in dirkenesse
and in þe Ryuerys fyrst gemmys sowhte

¹ Though this *Former Age* and the *Fortune* that follows have been printed before in our *Parallel Text*, I give 'em again here, to show how they turn-up in the *Boece*.

Allas than sprong' vp al the cursydnesse
of coueytise þat fyrst owr sorwe browhte (32)

¶ thyse tyrauntus put hem gladly nat in pres
4 no places wyldnesse ne no bussches for to wynne
Ther pouerte is as seith diogenes
ther as vitayle ek is so skars *and* thinne (36)

8 þat nat but mast or apples is ther-Inne
but þer as bagges ben *and* fat vitaile
with al hir ost the Cyte for to a-sayle
Ther wol they gon *and* spare for no synne (40)

¶ yit was no paleis chaumbres ne non halles
12 in kaues *and* wodes softe *and* swete
Sleptin this blyssed folk' with-owte walles
Or gras or leues in perfyt Ioye reste *and* quiete (44)

16 no down of fetheres ne no bleched shete
was kyd to hem but in surte they slepte
hir hertes weere al on with-owte galles
euerych of hem his feith to oother kepte (48)

¶ Vnforged was the hawberke *and* the plate
20 þe lambyssh poeple voyded of alle vyse
hadden no fantasies to debate
but eche of hem wolde oother wel cheryce (52)

No pride non enuye non Auaryce
24 No lord no taylage by no tyranye
vmblesse *and* pes good feith the emperice
[. no gap in MS.] (56)

¶ yit was nat Iuppiter the lykerous
28 þat fyrst was fadyr of delicasie
come in this world ne nembrot desyrous
to regne had nat maad his towres hye (60)

Allas allas now may wepe And crye
32 ffor in owre dayes nis but couetyse
dowblenesse *and* tresoun *and* enuye
poyson *and* manslawhter *and* mordre in sondry wyse (64)

Causer / Balades de vilage sanz peinture

¶ This wrecched worlde is *transmutacion*
as wele / or wo / now poere *and* now honour
with-owten ordyr or wis descresyon

4 gouerned is by fortunes errour

but natheles the lakke of hyr fauowr'
ne may nat don me syngen thowh .I. deye
Iay tout' perdu moun temps *et* moun labour

[leaf 53, back]

8 ffor fynaly fortune .I. the deffye

¶ yit is me left the lyht of my resoun
to knowen frend fro foo in thi merowre
So mochel hath yit thy whirlynge vp *and* down

12 I-tawht me for to knowe in an howre

but trewely no fors of thi reddowre
to hym þat ouer hym self hath the maystrye
My suffysaunce shal be my socoure

16 ffor fynaly fortune .I. thee deffye

¶ O Socrates þou stidfast chaumpyon
she neuer myht be thi tormentowr'
thow neuer dreddest hyr oppressyoun

20 ne in hyr chere fownde thow no sauoure

thow knewe wel the deseyte of hyr coloure
And þat hire most worshipe is to lye
I knew hir' ek a fals dissimuloure

24 ffor fynaly fortune .I. the deffye

Le responce de fortune a pleintif

¶ No man ys wrechchyd but hym self yt wene
and he þat hath hym self hat suffisaunce
whi seysthow thanne y am the so kene

28 þat hast thy self owt of my gouernaunce

sey thus graunt mercy of thyn haboundaunce
that thow hast lent or this why wolt þou stryue
what woost thow yit how y the wol auaunce

32 *and* ek thow hast thy beste frende a lyue

¶ I haue the tawht deuision by-twene (33)

ffrend of effect *and* frende of cowntenaunce
the nedeth nat the galle of no hyene

4 þat cureth eyen derkyd for penaunce (36)

now seist thow cleer þat weere in ignoraunce
yit halt thin ancre *and* yit thow mayst aryue
ther bownte berth the keye of my substaunce

8 *and* ek þou hast thy beste frende alyue (40)

¶ how manye haue .I. refused to sustigne
syn .I. the fostred haue in thy plesaunce
wolthow thanne make a statute on þy quyene

12 þat .I. shal ben ay at thy ordynaunce (44)

thow born art in my regne of varyaunce
abowte the wheel *with* oother most thow dryue
My loore is bet than wikke is thi greuaunce

16 *and* ek þou hast thy beste frende a lyue (48)

Le Responce du pleintif countre fortune.

¶ Thy loore y dempne / it is aduersyte [leaf 54]

My frend maysthow nat reuen blynde goddesse
þat .I. thy frendes knowe .I. thanke to the

20 Tak hem agayn / lat hem go lye on presse (52)

the negardye in kepyngge hyr rychesse
pronostik is thow wolt hire towre asayle
wikke appetyt comth ay before sykenesse

24 in general this rewle may nat fayle (56)

Le responce de fortune countre le pleintif

¶ Thow pynchest at my mutabylyte
ffor .I. the lente a drope of my rychesse
And now me lykyth to *with*-drawe me

28 whi sholdysthow my realte apresse (60)

the see may ebbe *and* flouen moore or lesse
the welkne hath myht to shyne reyne or hayle

ryht so mot .I. kythen my brute¹nesse
in general this rewle may nat fayle (64)

Le pleintif

¶ Lo excussyon of the maieste
4 þat al purueyeth of his ryhtwysnesse
that same thinge fortune clepyn ye
ye blynde beestys ful of lewednesse (68)
the heuene hath proprete of sykynesse
8 this world hath euer resteles trauayle
thy laste daye is ende of myn interse
in general this rewele may nat fayle (72)

Lenuoy de fortune

¶ Prynses .I. preye yow of yowre gentilleses
12 Lat nat this man on me thus crye *and* pleyne
And .I. shal quyte yow yowre bysynesse
at my requeste as thre of yow or tweyne (76)
þat but yow lest releue hym of hys peyne
16 preyeth hys best frend of his noblesse
That to som betere estat he may attayne

The sixte prose [*margin, leaf 56*]

20 **B**ut what shal .I. seye of dignites *and* of powers / the
whiche ye men þat neyther knowen verray dignite / ne
verray power / areysen hem as heye as the heuene / the
whiche dignites *and* powers yif they comen to any wykkyd
man they don as grete damages *and* destrucciouns / as doth the
flaumbe of the mountaigne ethna / whan the flawmbe walweth vp /
24 ne no deluge¹ ne doth so crwel harmes/ / Certes the remenbryth wel
as .I. trowe þat thikke dignite þat men clepyn the Imperiye of
consulers / the whych þat whilom was bygnnyng of fredom /
yowre eldres coueiteden to han don a-way þat dignite for the pride
28 of the consulers/ / And ryht for the same pride / yowre Eldres
byforn þat tyme hadden don a-wey owt of the cyte of Rome

¹ gloss: .i. diluuium.

the kynges name // þat is to seyn they nolde han no lengere no
 kyngē // but now yif so be / þat dignites *and* powers ben yeuen to
 goode men the which / thing is ful zelde/ /what agreable thinges is
 ther in tho dignites or powers / but^t oonly the goodnesse of foolkys / 4
 þat vsen hem/ /And therfor it is thus / þat honour ne comth nat
 to vertu / for cause of dignite / but ayeinward honour comth to
 dignite for cause of vertu // but which is thilke yowre ¹dereworthe
 power þat is so cleer *and* so requerable / O / ye erthelyche bestys 8
 considere ye nat ouer which thinge þat it semeth þat ye han power/
 /now yif thow saye a mous amonges oother musus þat chalengede
 to hym self ward ryht *and* power ouer alle oother mysus // how gret^t
 scorn woldisthow han of hit^t // glosa/ /So farith yt by men the 12
 body hath power ouer the body // ffor yif thow looke wel vp on the
 body of a wyht / what thinge shalthow fynde moore freele than is
 man kynde / the whiche men wel ofte ben slayn *with* bytynge of
 smale flies / or elles *with* the entrynge of crepynge wormes in to the 16
 priuetes of mannes body/ /but wher shal men fynden any man þat
 may excercen or haunten any ryht vp on a noþer man / but^t oonly
 on hys body or elles vp on thinges þat ben lowere than the body //
 the which .I. clepe fortunows possessyouns/ /Maysthow euer haue 20
 any comaundement^t ouer a fre corage²/ /Maysthow remwen fro the
 estat of his propre reste / a thowht^t that is clyuyngē to-gidere in hym
 self by stidefast resoun // as whylom a tyraunt^t wende to confownde
 a fre man of corage / *and* wende to constreyne hym by torment to 24
 maken hym discoueren *and* acusen folk^t þat wysten of a *coniuracion*
 which .I. clepe a confederacie þat was cast ayeins this tyraunt/ /but
 this fre man boot of his owne tonge *and* cast it in the visage of
 thilke woode tyraunt^t // so þat the tormentus þat this tyraunt^t wende 28
 to han maked matere of crwelte this wiseman makyd it makyd it
 matere of vertu/ /but what thing is it þat a man may don to a
 nother man / þat he ne may resseyuen the same thinge of oothre folkes
 in hym self / or thus what may a man don to folk^t þat folkes ne may 32
 don hym the same/ /.I. haue herd told of busirides þat was wont to
 slen hise gestys / þat herberweden in his hows / *and* he was sleyn

¹ leaf 56, back.² gloss : quoa. dicit. non.

hym self of ercules þat was his gest // Regulus hadde takyn in
 batayle many men of affryke *and* cast hem in to feteres/ /but sone
 after he moste yeue hys handes to ben bownde *with* the cheynes of
 4 hem þat hadde whylom ouercomen // weenesthow thanne þat he be
 myhty that hath no power to don a thinge þat oothre ne may don in
 hym / þat he doth in oothre / And yit moore ouer yif it so weere
 þat these dignites or poweres hadden any propre or natural goodnesse
 8 in hem self / neuer nolden they ¹comyn to shrewes/ /For contraryos
 thinges ne ben nat^t wont^t to ben Ifelawshipped to-gidere/ /Nature
 refuseth þat contrarious thinges ben .I.-ioigned / *and* so as .I.
 am in certein þat ryht wykkyd folk han dignites ofte tyme / than
 12 sheweth it wel þat dignites *and* powers ne ben nat goode of hire
 owne kynde // syn þat they suffren hem self to cleuen or Ioynen
 hem to shrewes/ /And certes the same thinge may moost digneliche
 . Iugen *and* seyn of alle the yiftes of fortune / þat moost plenteuously
 16 comyn to shrewes / of þ^e which yiftes .I. trowe þat yt owhte ben
 consideryd / þat no man dolteth þat he nis strong^t in whom he seth
 strengthe // *and* in whom þat swyftnesse is/ /soth is that he swyft^t //
 Also Musike maketh Musuciens / *and* phisike maketh phisissiens /
 20 *and* rethoryk rethoryens // ffor whi the nature of euery thing
 maketh his proprete/ /ne it nis nat entremedled / *with* the effect of
 the contraryous thinges / And as of wil it chaseth owt thinges þat
 to it ben contrarye // but certes Rychesse may nat^t restreyne Auarice
 24 vnstaunched/ /ne power ne makyth nat^t a man myhty ouer hym
 self / whiche þat visyous lustys holden destreynd *with* cheynes þat
 ne mowen nat be vnbownden/ /And dignites þat ben yeuen to
 shrewede folkes nat oonli ne makyth hem nat digne / but it sheweth
 28 rather al opynly þat they ben vnworthi *and* vndigne/ /And why is
 it thus / Certes for ye han Ioye to clepyn thinges *with* false names
 þat beren hem alle in þ^e contrarye // the which names ben ful ofte
 reproeued by the effecte of the same thinges/ /So that this ilke
 32 rychesse ne owhten nat by ryht^t to ben clepyd rychesses / ne swich
 power ne owhte nat ben clepyd power / ne swich dignite ne owht nat^t
 ben clepyd dignite // And at^t the laste .I. may conclude the same

thing / of alle the yiftes of fortune / in which þer nis nothings to
ben desired / ne þat hath in hym self naturel bownte / as it is
ful wel .I.-seene / ffor neyther they ne Ioignen hem nat alwey to
goode men / ne makyn hem alwey goode to whom they ben .I.- 4
ioigned // verbi gratia /

¶ The sixte Metur [*margin, leaf 57, back*]

WE han wel knowen how many grete harmes *and*
destrucsyons weren don by the emperour nero // he
let brenne the Cyte of Rome *and* made slen the 8
senatoures/ /And he crwel whilom slow his brother
and he was makyd moyst with the blood of his modyr / þat is to
seyn he lette slen *and* slitten the body of his modyr / to sen wher he
was conseuyed / *and* he lookyd on euery halue vp on hyr colde dede 12
body / ne no teere ne wette¹ his face/ /but he was so hard hertyd /
þat he myhte ben domes man or Iuge of hyr dede beaute / *and*
natheles yit gouernede this nero by ceptre alle the poeples that
phebus the sonne may sen / Comynge fram hys owtereste arsyngge til 16
he hide his bemes vndyr the wawes / þat is to seyn he gouernyd alle
the poeples by sceptre inperial þat the sonne goth a-bowte from est
to west² And ek this nero gouernyd by ceptre alle the poeples þat ben
vndyr the colde sterres that hyhten vii tryyones / this to seyn he 20
gouernede alle the poeples þat ben vndyr the party of the north /
and ek nero gouernede alle þe poeples þat the vyolent wynd nothus
scorklith / *and* bakyth the brennyng sandes by hys drye hete / þat
is to seyn alle the poeples in the sowth/ /but yit ne myhte nat al 24
his hye power torne the woodnesse of this wykkyd nero / Allas it is
greuous fortune it is // as ofte as wykked swerd is ioyned to crwel
venym / þat is to seyn venimos crwelte to lordshippe

¶ The seuende prose [*margin, leaf 60*]

THanne seyde .I. thus // thow wost wel thy self þat the 28
coueytise of mortal thinges ne hadden neuer lordshipe of
me/ /but .I. haue wel desyred matere of thinges / to done /
as who seyth .I. desyre to han matere of gouernaunce ouer

¹ MS wecte.

² leaf 58.

comunalitees/ /ffor vertu stille ne sholde nat elden // þat is to seyn
 þat list þat or he wax old / his vertu þat lay now ful styлле / ne sholde
 nat perise vn-exercised in gouernaunce of comune / ffor which men
 4 myhten spekyng or wryten of his goode gouernement // philosophie //
 ffor sothe *quod she and* that is a thing þat may drawn to gouernaunce /
 swiche hertes as ben worthi *and* noble of hir nature/ /but natheles it
 may nat drawn ¹or tollen swiche hertes as ben .I.-browht to the fulle
 8 perfeccyon of vertu // þat is to seyn coueytise of glorye *and* renoun
 to han wel admynystryd the comune thinges or don gode desertes to
 profyt of the comune/ /ffor se now *and* consydere how lytul *and* how
 voyde of alle prys is thilke glorie/ /Certein thing is as thow hast
 12 lerned by the demonstracyoun astronomye // þat al the enuyronyng
 of the erthe abowte ne halt but the resoun of a prikke at regard of the
 gretnesse of heuene/ /þat is to seyn / þat yif ther weere makid
 comparisoun of the erthe to the gretnesse of heuene / men woldyn
 16 Iugen in al / þat the erthe ne helde no space/ /of the whyche litel /
 region) of this worlde / the ferthe partye ys enhabited with lyuyng
 bestys þat we knowen / as thow hast thyself ylerned by tholome þat
 proueth it/ /And yif thow haddest with-drawn / *and* abated in thy
 20 thowht fro thilke ferthe partye as moche space as the see *and* the
 mareys contenen and ouer-goon / *and* as moche spaces as the region) of
 drowhte ouerstrecheth / þat is to seyn sandes *and* desertes // vel /
 vnnethe sholde ther dwellyn a ryht streyt place to the habyta.
 24 syoun of men / And ye thanne þat ben enuyroned *and* closed with-
 in the leste prykke / of thilke prykke / thinken ye to manifesten
 yowre renoun *and* don yowre name to ben born forth // but yowre
 glorye þat is so narwh *and* so streyte Ithrongen in to so lytul
 28 bowndes/ /how mochel coueyteth yt in largesse *and* in gret dooinge
 And also sette this ther to // þat many a nasyoun diuerse of tonge
 a[n]d of maneres and ek of resoun of hir lyuyng ben enhabyted in
 the clos of thilke lytul habytacule/ /to the whiche naciouns / what
 32 for deficulte of weyes / and what for deficulte of langages / And
 what defawte of vn-vsage *and* entrecomunyng of marchaundise /
 nat only the ñames of syngler men ne may nat stretchen / but ek

¹ leaf 60, back.² gloss: i. vix.

the fame of cytes ne may nat strecchen // at the laste certes in the
tyme of marchus tullius / as hym self writ in his book / þat the
renoun of the comune of rome ne hadden nat passed ne clowmbyn
ouer the Mountaigne þat hyhte caucasus/ /And yit was thikke tyme 4
Roome wel waxen / and gretly redowted of the parthes and ek of
oother folk^t enhabybynge a-bowte // sestow nat thanne how streyt
and how compressed is thilke glorye / þat ye travaylen ¹A-bowte to
shewe and to multiplie/ /May thanne the glorye of a singler romayne 8
strecchen thyder as the fame of the name of Rome may nat clymbyn
ne passen/ /And ek seysthow nat that the maneres of diuerse folk^t and
ek hir lawes ben discordaunt among^t hem self/ /So þat thilke thinge
þat som men Iugen worthy of preysynge / oother foolk^t Iugen þat it 12
is worthi of torment/ /And ther-of comth it þat thogh a man
delyte hym in preysynge of his renoun / he may nat in no wyse
bryngen forth ne spreden his name to many maner poeples // ther-
for euery manere man owhte to ben apayed of his glorye þat is 16
publyssed among^t his owne nesshebours/ /And thilke noble renoun
shal ben restreynyd with-in the bowndes of o manere folk^t // but
how many a man þat was ful noble in hys tyme / hath the
wrechched and nedy foryetinge of wryteres put owt of mynde and 20
don away / al be it so þat certes thilke wrytynges profyten lytul /
the whyche wrytynges long^t and derk elde doth a-vey / bothe hem
and ek hir actorros // but yow men semeth to geten yow a per-
durablete whan ye thinken þat in tyme to comynge yowre fame shal 24
lasten // but^t natheles yif thow wolt maken comparysoun to the
endeles spaces of eternite / what thing hast thow by which thow
mayst reioysen the of long^t lastynge of thi name/ /ffor yif ther were
makyd comparyson of the a-bydyng of a moment to .x. thowsand 28
wynter/ /ffor as mochel as bothe the spaces ben ended / ffor yit
hath the moment som porsyoun of it^t al thowgh it lytul be / but
natheles thilke selue nowmbyr of yeres / and ek as many yeeres as
ther-to may be multyplied / ne may nat certes ben comparysoned to 32
the perdurablyte þat is endeles / ffor of thinges þat han ende may be
maked comparysoun / but of thinges that ben with-owtyn ende to

thinges þat han ende may be maked no *comparysoun* / *and* forþi is
 it / þat al though renoun of as longe tyme / as euere the lyst to
 thinken / weere thowt to the regard of eternite þat is vnstaunchable
 4 *and* infynyt it ne sholde nat oonly semen lytel / but pleyntyche ryht
 nawht / but ye men certes ne konne don noþinge a ryht / but
 yif yt be for the audience of poeple / *and* for idil rumours / *And* ye
 forsaken the grete worthinesse of concience *and* of vertu // *and* ye
 8 seken yowre gerdouns of the smale wordes of straunge folkes / haue
 now her *and* vndyrstonde / in the lyhtnesse of swych pride *and*
 veyne glorye / how a man scornede festyually *and* meryly swych
 vanite // whilom þer was a man þat hadde assayed with stryuyng
 12 wordes a nother¹ man / the which nat for vsage of verray vertu / but
 for proude veyne glorye had taken vp on hym falsly the name of a
 philisophre / this rather man þat .I. spak of / thowhte he wolde assaye
 weere he thilke weere a philosophre or no / þat is to seyn yif þat he
 16 wolde han suffred lyhtly in pacience the wronges þat weeren don vn
 to hym // this feynede philosophre took pacience a lytel whyle / *and*
 whan he hadde resseyuyd wordes of owtrage / he as in stryuyng
 ayein *and* reioisynge of hym self seyde at the laste ryht thus //
 20 vndyrstondow nat þat .I. am a philosophre / þat oother man
 answerde ayein ful bytyngly *and* seyde .I. hadde wel vndyrstondyn
 yt yif thou haddest holden thi tonge stille // but what is it² to thise
 noble worthi men / ffor certes of swyche foolk¹ / speke .I. / þat
 24 sekyn glorye with vertu / what¹ is it *quod* she / what¹ atteyneth
 fame to swyche foolk / whan the body is resoluyd by the deth at
 the laste // ffor yif yt so be þat men dyen in al / þat is to seyn body
and sowle / the whyche thing¹ owre resoun deffendeth vs to by-
 28 leeuen / thanne is ther no glorye in no wyse / for what sholde
 thilke glorye ben // whan he of whom thilke glorye is seyde to be nis
 ryht nawht in no wyse / *And* yif the sowle whyche þat hath in it
 self science of goode werkes / vnbownden fro the prison of the
 32 erthe³ wendeth frely to the heuene / despyseth it⁴ nat thanne alle
 erthely occupacion / *and* beinge in heuene reioiseth // þat it is

¹ leaf 61, back.² gloss: .s. fama.³ gloss: .i. corporis.⁴ gloss: .i. anima.

exempt^t fro alle Erthely thinges / as who seith / thanne rekketh the
sowle of no glorye of renou^d of this world

[*The Seventh Metre (leaf 62)*]

Who so þat with ouerthrowynge thought oonly seketh
glorye of fame *and* wenith þat it be souereyn ¹Good // 4
Lat hym looken vp on the brode shewynge contreyes of heuene / *and*
vp on the streyte Cyte of this erthe / And he shal ben ashamyd of
the eneres of his name þat may nat fulfyll the litel compas of þ^e
Erthe / /O what coueyten prowde folk to lyften vp hir nekkes in 8
ydel in the dedly yok of this worlde / /ffor al though þat renou^d
ysprad passynge to ferne poeples / goth by diuerse tonges // *and* al
though þat grete howses or kynredes shynen with cler titlys of
honours / yit natheles deth despyseth alle heye glorye of fame // 12
And deth wrappeth to-gydere the heye heuedes *and* the lowe / *and*
makith egal *and* euene the heyoste to the loweste // where wonen
now the bones of trewe fabrycius / what is now brutus / or stierne
catoun // the thynne fame yit^t lastynge of hir ydel names is marked 16
with a fewe letterys / /but^t al though þat we han knowen the fayre
wordes of the fames of hem // it is nat^t yeuen to knowe hem þat ben
dede *and* consumpte / /Liggeth² thanne stille al owtrely vnknowable //
ne fame ne maketh yow nat knowe / /And yif ye weene to lyuen the 20
longere for wynde of yowre mortal name / whan o cruwel day shal
rauysshe yow thanne is the seconde deth dwellynge vn to yow //
Glose // the fyrst deth he clepith heere departynge of þ^e body *and*
the sowle / /And the seconde deth he clepith as heere the stintynge 24
of the renou^d of fame

¶ The viij prose [*margin, leaf 63*]

BVt for as mochel as thou shalt nat wenen quod she þat I
bere vntretable batayle ayeins fortune // yit som tyme it by-
falleth þat she desseyuable desserueth to han ryht good 28
thank of men / *and* þat is whan she hire self opneth / *and*
whan she descouereth hir frownt / *and* sheweth ³hir maneres per

¹ leaf 62, back.

² gloss: .s. superbi.

³ leaf 63, back.

auenture yit' vndirstondesthew nat þat .I. shal seye // it is a
wondyr þat .I. desyre to telle / and forthi vnnethe may .I.
vnpleyten my sentense with wordes for .I. deme þat contraryos
4 fortune profiteth more to men than fortune debonayre/ //for al wey
whan fortune semeth debonayre than she lyeth falsly in by-hetyng
the hope of welefulnesse // but forsothe *contraryos* fortune is alwey
sothfast / whan she sheweth hir self vnstable thorw hyr chaungynge /
8 / the amyable fortune desseyueth folk / the contrarye fortune
techeth/ /the amyable fortune byndeth with the beaute of false
goodys the hertes of folk þat vsen hem / the contrarye fortune
vnbyndeth hem ye þ^e knowynge of freele welefulnesse/ /the
12 amyable fortune maysthow sen alwey wyndynge and flowynge / and
euere mysknowynge of hir self // the contrarye fortune is a-tempre
and restreynynd and wys thorw excersyse of hir' aduersyte/ /at the
laste amyable fortune with hir flaterynges draweth mys-wandrynge
16 men fro the souereyne good // the contraryos fortune ledith ofte
folk ayein to sothfast goodes and haleth hem ayein as with an hooke /
weenestthow thanne þat thow owhtest to leten this a lytel thing /
þat this aspre and horrible fortune hath discoueryd to the / the
20 thowhtes of thy trewe frendes/ //for why this ilke fortune hath
departyd and vncoueryd to the bothe the certeyn vysages and ek the
dowtos visages of thy felawes/ /whan she departyd away fro the /
she took away hyr frendes and lafte the thyne frendes/ /now whan
24 thow were ryche and weleful as the semede / with how mochel
woldesthow han bowht the fulle knowynge of this // þat is to seyn
the knowynge of thy verray frendes/ /now pleyne the nat thanne
of Rychesse .I.-lorn / syn thow hast fowndyn the moste presyos
28 kynde of Rychesses þat is to seyn thy verray frendes

¶ The viii Metur [margin, leaf 64, back]

32 **T**hat þ^e world with stable feith / varieth acordable chaung-
ynges // þat the contraryos qualite of *elementus*¹ holden
among' hemself aliaunce perdurable / þat phebus¹ the sonne
with his goldene chariet / bryngeth forth the rosene day /
þat the mone hath commaundement ouer the nyhtes/ /whiche

¹ MS *elementz*, *phbz*.

nyhtes *hesperus* the eue sterre hat browt // þat þ^e se gredy to flouen
constreyneth *with* a certeyn ende hise floodes / So þat it is nat lueful
to stretche hise brode termes or bowndes vp on the erthes/ /þat is
to seyn to couere alle the erthe / Al this a-cordaunce of thinges is 4
bownden *with* looue / þat gouerneth erthe *and* see / *and* hath¹ also
commaundementus to the heuenes *and* yif this looue slakede the
brydelis / alle thinges þat now louen hem to-gederes / wolden
maken a batayle contynuely / *and* stryuen to fordoon the fason) of 8
this worlde / the which they now leden in acordable feith by fayre
moeuynges/ /this looue halt to-gideres poeples Ioygned *with* an
hooly bond / *and* knytteth sacrament of maryages of chaste looues //
And loue enditeth lawes to trewe felawes/ /O weleful weere man- 12
kynde / yif thilke loue þat gouerneth heuene gouerned yowre corages //

Explicit liber 2^{us} ./

[leaf 64, back.]

Incipit liber 3 ./

[BOOK III.]

¶ The fyrste prose [*margin, leaf 65, back*]

BY this she hadde endid hire songe / whan the swetnesse of
hire ditee hadde thorw perced me þat was desirous of
herkninge *and* .I. astoned hadde yit streyhte myn Eres / 16
þat is to seyn to herkne the bet / what she wolde seye/ /So
þat a litel here-after .I. seyde thus/ /O thow þat art souereyn comfort
of Angwissos corages / So thow hast remounted *and* norysshed me
with the weyhte of thy sentenses *and* *with* delit of thy syngynges // 20
So þat .I. trowe nat now þat .I. be vnpanygal to the strokes of fortune /
as who seyth .I. dar wel now suffren al the assautes of fortune *and*
wel deffende me fro hyr/ /*and* tho remedies whyche þat thow
seydest hire byforn weren ryht sharpe Nat ononly þat .I. am nat 24
a-grysen of hem now // but¹ .I. desiros of herynges axe gretely to

¹ *gloss*: .s. amor.

heeren the remedies/ /than seyde she thus // þat feelede .I. ful wel
quod she/ /whan þat thow ententyf *and* styлле rauysshedest my
 wordes/ /*and* .I. abood til þat thow haddest swych habyte of thy
 4 thought^t as thow hast now // or elles tyl þat .I. my self had maked
 to the the same habyt^t / which þat is a moore verray thing^t // *And*
 certes the remenaunt of thinges þat ben yit to seye / ben swyche/
 /þat fyrst whan men tasten hem they ben bytynge / but whan they
 8 ben resseyued *with-inne* a whyht than ben they swete/ /but for
 thow seyst þat thow art so desirous to herkne hem/ /wit how gret
 brennynge woldesthow glowen / yif thow wystem whyder .I. wol
 leden the/ /whydyre is þat *quod* .I./ /to thilke verray welefulnesse
 12 *quod* she/ /of whyche thyng herte dremeth // but for as moche as
 thy syhte is ocupied *and* disturbed / by Imagynasyon of herthely
 thynges / thow mayst nat yit sen thilke selue welefulnesse/ /do *quod*
 .I. *and* shewe me / what is thilke verray welefulnesse / .I. preye the
 16 *with-howte* tarynge/ /þat wole .I. gladly don *quod* she / for the cause
 of the/ /but .I. wol fyrst ¹marken the by-words *and* I wol enforcen
 me to en-formen the/ /thilke false cause of blysfulnesse þat thow
 more knowest / so þat whan thow hast fully by-holden thilke false
 20 goodes *and* torned thyne eyen to þat oother syde / thow mowe knowe
 the clernesse of verray blysfulnesse/ /

The fyrst metur [*from margin*]

24 **W**ho so wole sowe a feeld plentiuos / lat hym fyrst
 delyuere it fro thornes / *and* kerue a sonder *with* hijs
 hook the bosses *and* the fern / so þat þ^e korn may
 comen heuy of heres *and* of greynes/ /hony is the
 more swete yif mowthes han fyrst tastyd sauoures þat ben wyckyd //
 the sterres shynen more agreablely / whan the wynd nothus leteth hise
 28 plowngy blastes/ /*and* after þat lucifere the day sterre hath chasyd
 away the dirke nyht the day the fayrere ledith the rosene hors of the
 sonne // *And* ²Ryht so thow by-holdyng fyrst the false goodes /
 bygyn to *with-drawn* thy nekke fro the yok of Erthely affeccyouns/
 32 /*And* after-ward the verre goodes shollen entren in to thy corage //

¶ The 2^{de} prose / [*leaf 68, margin*]

THo fastnede she a lytul the syht^t of hir eyen *and with-drowh*
 hire / ryht as it^t weere in to the streyte Cyte of hir thowht /
and bygan to speke ryht thus // alle the cures *quod* she ¹Of
 mortal foolk^t / whiche þat trauaylen hem in many manere 4
 studies / goon certes by diuerse weyes/ /but natheles they enforseen
 hem alle to comyn oonly to oon ende of blysfulnesse // And blysful-
 nesse is swyche a good / þat who so þat hath geten it^t / he ne may
 ouer that no thing^t moore desyre / *and* this thing is forsothe þ^e 8
 souereyn good / þat conteyneth in hym self alle manere goodes/ /to
 þ^e whyche good yif ther faylyde any thing / it myhte nat ben clepyd
 souereyn good/ /for thanne weere ther som good owt of this ilke
 souereyn good þat myhte ben desyred / now is it^t clere *and* certein 12
 thanne þat blysfulnesse is a *perfy*t estat^t by the congregasyon of alle
 goodes // the whyche blysfulnesse as I haue seyde alle mortal foolk
 enforseen hem to geten by dyuerse wyes/ /ffor why the coueityse of
 verry good is naturelly yplanted in the hertes of men/ /but the 16
 mys-wandrynge error mys-ledeth hem in to false goodes/ /of the
 whyche men / som of hem wenyþ þat souereyn good be to lyuen
 with owte nede of any thing / *and* trauaylen hem to be haboundaunt^t
 of Rychesses / *and* som oother men demen þat souereyn good ben / 20
 for to ben ryht digne of reuerence / *and* enforcen hem to ben reuer-
 enced a-mong hyr nesshebors / by the honours þat they han ygeten /
and some folk ther ben þat holden þat ryht heyh power be souereyn
 good *and* enforcen hem for to regnen or elles to Ioignen hem to hem 24
 þat regnen // *and* it semeth to some oother foolk / þat noblesse of
 renom be the souereyn good / *and* hasten hem to geten gloryos name /
 by the artz of werre *and* of pees // *and* many folk mesuren *and*
 gessen þat souereyn good by Ioye *and* gladnesse / *and* wenen þat it be 28
 ryht blysful thyng / to plowngen hem in voluptuos delit/ /*and* ther
 ben folk þat entrechaungenthe causes *and* the endes of thyse forseide
 goodes / As they þat desyren rychesses to han power *and* delytes //
 Or elles they desyren power for to han moneye or for cause of renom/ 32
 /In these things *and* in swyche oothre thynges is torded alle the

entencion) of desyrynges *and* of werkes of men / as thus / noblesse
and fauore of poeple / whyche þat yeueth to men as it semeth hem
amanere clernesse of renou) // *and* wyf *and* chyl dren þat men desyren
4 for cause of delit *and* of merynesse // but forsothe ¹frendes ne sholden
nat ben rekned a-mong tho godes of fortune / but of v̄ertu / for yt
ys a ful hooly manere thyng/ /alle these oothre thynges forsothe ben
takyn for cause of power / or elles for cause of delit/ /Certes now am
8 I· redy. to referren the goodes of the body to these forseide thynges
abouen/ /ffor yt semeth þat strengthe *and* gretnesse of body yeuen
power *and* worthynesse/ /*and* þat beaute *and* sweftnesse yeuen
noblesses *and* glorye of renou) / *and* hele of body semeth yeuen delit/
12 / In alle these thynges it semyth oonly þat blysfulnesse is desired /
ffor why thilke thing^t þat euery man desyreth most / ouer alle thynges /
he demeth þat yt be the souereyn good but .I. haue deffyned þat
blysfulnesse is the souereyn good/ /ffor whych euery whyht demeth
16 that thilke estat^t þat he desyreth ouer alle thynges þat it be blysful-
nesse/ /Now hast^t thou thanne byforn thy eyen / alme^t al the
purposed forme of the welefulnesse of man-kyngde / þat is to seyn /
Rychesses / honours / power / *and* glorye / *and* delit^z / the whiche delit
20 oonly consyderede Epicurus // And Iuged *and* establyssed þat delit is
the souereyn good / ffor as moche al alle oothre thynges as hym
thowhte by-refte away Ioye *and* myrthe fram the herte/ /but I retorne
ayein to the studies of men / of whiche men / the corage alway
24 reherseth *and* seketh the souereyn good / al be it so / þat it be *with*
a dirkyd memorye / but he not by whiche paath/ /Ryht^t as a dronken
man not nat^t by whiche paath he may retorne hym to hys hows/
/semeth it thanne þat foolk foleyn *and* erren / þat enforcen hem to
28 haue nede of nothyng // Certes ther nis non oother thyng þat may so
wel performe blysfulnesse / as an estat plentyuous of alle goodes / þat
ne hath nede of non oother thing / but þat^t it is suffysaunt of
hymself / vnto hym self/ /And foleyn swyche folk thanne þat
32 wenen þat / that thilke thing þat is ryht good / þat it be ek ryht
worthy of honour *and* of Reuerence / certes nay // ffor that thing
nys neyther fowl / ne worthy to ben despised þat welneyh / alle

the entencyon of mortal foolk trauaylen for to geten yt/ /and
 powere owhte nat þat ek / to ben rekened amonges goodes/ /what
 elles / ffor it is nat to wene þat thilke thyng þat is most worthy of
 alle thinges be feble *and* with-owte strengthe // And cleernesse of 4
 reynoun owhte þat to ben despised/ /¹Certes ther may no man for-
 sake þat alle thyng þat is ryht excellent *and* noble þat yt ne semeth
 to ben ryht cleer *and* renommed./ /ffor certes it nedith nat to seye þat
 blysfulnesse be Angwyssos ne drery ne subgyd to greuaunces ne to 8
 sorwes/ /syn þat in ryht lytel thynges folk seken to haue *and* to
 vsen þat may delyten hem / Certes thise ben the thinges þat men
 wolen *and* desyren to geten/ /And for this cause desyren they /
 Rychesses dignites / regnes / glorye / *and* delices / ffor therby wenen 12
 they to han suffysaunse / honour / power¹ / renoun / *and* gladnesse/
 /than is yt good / þat men seken thus by so many diuerse studijs/
 /In whiche desyr it may lyhtly ben shewyd / how gret is the strengthe
 of nature / for how so þat men han diuerse sentences *and* discordynge/ 16
 /Allegates men acordyn alle in louynge the ende of good/ / /

¶ The 2^{de} Metur [leaf 70, back, margin]

IT liketh me to shewe by subtyl song / with slakke *and*
 delitable son of strenges / how þat nature myhty enclyneth
and flitteth the gouernementz of thinges/ /*and* by whyche 20
 lawes she purueyable kepith the grete world / *and* how she
 byndynge restreyneth alle thynges by a bonde þat may nat ben
 vnbownde/ /Al be it so þat the lyouns of the contre of pene / beren
 the fayre chaynes / *and* taken metes of the handes of folk¹ þat yeuen 24
 it hem / *and* dredyn hyr sturdy maystres / of whiche they ben wont
 to suffren betinges/ /yif þat hyr horyble mowthes ben by-bled þat
 is to seyn of bestys deuowred / hyr corage of tyme passed þat hath
 ben ydel *and* rested repeyareth ayein/ /And they roren greuosly / 28
and remembryn on hyr nature / *and* slaken hyr nekkes fram hyr
 chaynes vnbownde // And hyr mayster fyrst to-torn with blody toth /
 assayeth the wode wrathes of hem // this to seyn / they fretyn
 hyr mayster/ /And the Iangelynge bryd þat syngeth on the heye 32
 braunches / þat is to seyn in the wode / *and* after is enclosed in a

¹ leaf 69, back.

streight cage/ /Al thowh þat the pleynnge bysynesse of men yeueth
hem honyede drynkes / *and* large metes with swete studye/ yit
natheles yif thylke bryd skypynge owt of hyr streyte cage / seth
4 the agreables shadewes of the wodes / she defowlyth with hyr feet
hyr metes I-shad / *and* seketh mowrnynge oonly the wode/ *and*
twiterith desyrnge the wode with hyr swete voys/ /the yerde of
atre þat is haled a-down by myhty strengthe bowith redyly the crop
8 adown/ /but yif þat the hand of hym þat yt bent lat it goon ayein /
Anon the crop loketh vp ryht to heuene/ /the sonne phebz þat
falleth at euen in the westrene wawes / retorneth ayein est sones /
hys carte by pryue paath there as it is wont aryse/ ./Alle thinges
12 seken ayein to hyr propre cours / *and* alle thinges reioysen hem of
hyr retornynge ayein to hyr nature // Ne non ordynaunce nis by-
taken to thinges / but þat / that hath Ioyned the endynge to the
bygynnyng/ /And hat¹ maked the cours of it self stable / þat it
16 ² chaungeth nat from hys propre kynde

¶ The 3^{de} prose [*leaf 72, margin*]

Oertes also ye men þat ben Erthelythe beestes dremen alwey
yowre bygynnyng / Al though it be with a thynne Imagyn-
acyon / *and* by a manere thought // al be it nat clerly / ne
20 perfytyly / ye loken fram a fer to thylke verray fyn of blys-
fulnesse // *and* ther-fore naturel en³entencyon ledith yow to thylke
verray good/ /but many manere errors mys-torneth yow ther-fro/
/considere now yif that by thylke thinges by whiche a man weneth to
24 geten hym blysfulnesse / yif þat he may comyn to thylke ende þat
he weneth to come by nature/ /ffor yif þat moneye or honours / or
thyse oother forseide thinges / bryngen to men swych a thyng / þat
no good ne fayle hem / ne semeth fayle/ /Certes than wole .I. graunte
28 þat they ben maked blysfyl by thylke thinges þat they han geten/
/but yif so be þat thylke thynges ne mowen nat performen þat
they by-heten / *and* þat ther be defaute of manye goodes/ /sheweth
it nat thanne clerly þat false beaute of blysfulnesse / is knowen
32 *and* ataynt in thylke thynges/ /ffyrst *and* forward / thow thy
self þat haddest habundaunces of Rychesses nat long agoon .I.

¹ gloss: .s. ordo.

² leaf 71.

³ leaf 72, back.

axe yif þat in the habundaunce of alle thylke Rychesses / thow were
 neuer angwissos or sory in thy corage of any wrong or greuaunce þat
 by-tydde the on any syde/ /Certes quod .I. it ne remenbryth me nat
 þat euere I was so free of my thowht þat .I. ne was alwey in 4
 angwyssh of som what/ /And was nat þat quod she for þat the
 lacked som what / þat thow noldest nat han lacked/ /Or elles thow
 haddest þat thow noldest nat han had/ /ryht so is it quod .I. //
 thanne desiredyst thow the presence of þat oon / and the absence of 8
 þat oother / .I. graunte wel quod .I. // fforsothe quod she than nedeth
 ther som what þat euery man desireth/ /ye ther nedeth quod I /
 Certes quod she and he þat hath lacke or nede of awht nis nat in
 euery wey suffysaunte to hym self / no quod I. // And thow quod 12
 she in al the plente of thy Rychesses haddest thilke lakke of suffys-
 aunse // what elles quod .I. / thanne may nat Rychesses makyn þat a
 man nis nedy / ne þat he be suffisaunt to hym self / and þat was it
 þat they by-hyhten as it semeth/ /And ek certes .I. trowe þat thys 16
 be gretly to consydere / þat moneye ne hath nat in hys owne kynde /
 þat it ne may ben by-nomen of hem þat han it / Mawgre hem/ / .I.
 by-knowe it wel quod .I./ /why sholdesthow nat by-knowen it
 quod she / whan euery day the strengere folk by-nemyn it fro the 20
 febelere / Mawgre hem/ /ffor whennes comyn elles alle thyse foreyne
 compleyntes or queeles of pletynges / but for þat men axen ayeyn
 here ¹Moneye þat hath ben by-nomen by force or by gyle and alwey
 mawgre hem // ryht so is it quod .I. // than quod she hath a man 24
 nede to seken hym foreyne help by wyche he may deffende hys
 moneye/ /who may sey nay quod .I./ /Certes quod she and hym
 nedede non help / yif he ne hadde no moneye þat he myhte leese/
 /þat is dowteles quod .I. // than is this thing torned in to the con- 28
 trarye quod she / ffor Rychesses þat men wenen sholde make suffis-
 aunce / they makyn a man rather han nede of foreyne help/ /whych
 is the manere or the gyse quod she þat Rychesse may dryue away nede
 Ryche ffolk may they neyther han hungyr ne thurst // thyse Ryche 32
 men may the fele no coold on hyr lymes on wyntur/ /but thow wolt
 Answeren / þat Ryche men han y-now / wher-with they may staunchen

¹ leaf 73.

hyr hongyr / slaken here thurst *and* don a-wey coold/ /In thys wyse
 may nede be counforted by Rychesses // but' certes nede ne may al
 vtrelly ben don a-wey // ffor thowgh / this nede þat is alwey gapyng
 4 *and* gredy be fulfyd with Rychesses *and* axe any thyng / yit dwelleth
 thanne A nede þat myhte be fulfyd/ /.I. holde me styлле *and* telle
 nat' how þat lytel thyng suffiseth to nature // but certes to Aueryce
 ynowh ne suffiseth no thing/ /ffor syn þat Rychesse ne may nat al
 8 doon alwey nede / but Rychesses maken nede / what may it thanne
 be / þat ye wenen þat Rychesses mowen yeuen yow suffisaunce

¶ The 3.^{de} Metur [*margin, leaf 73*]

12 **A**L were it so þat A Ryche coueytos man hadde a Ryuer
 fletynge al of gold / yit sholde it neuer staunchyn hys
 coueytise // And thow he hadde hys nekke ycharyd
¹with presios stones of the Rede see / *and* thow he do
 Ere hys feeldes plentyuous with An hundred oxen/ /neuer ne shal hys
 bytyng bysynesse for-leten hym whyl he leuith / ne the lyhte
 16 Rychesses ne shol nat beryn hym compaignie / whan he is ded //

¶ The 4^{the} prose [*Leaf 73, back, margin*]

20 **B**Vt dignitees to whom they ben comyn maken they hym
 honorable¹ *and* reuerent' han they nat so gret strengthe / þat
 they may putte vertuus in the hertes of foolk' þat vsen the
 lordshippys of hem/ /Or elles may they don a-wey the
 vyces/ /Certes they ne be nat wont' to don away wykkydnesse/ /but
 they ben wont rather shewen wykkydnesse/ *and* ther-of comth it
 þat .I. haue ryht gret' desdaign / þat dignitees ben yeuen ofte to
 24 wykkyd men/ /ffor which thyng Catullus clepyd a *consul* of Rome/
 þat hyhte *nomyus postum* or boch/ /as who seyht he clepyd hym a
 congregasyon² of vyces in hys brest as a *postum* is ful of corupsyun//
 Al were this *nomyus* set in chayre of dignite/ /Sesthow nat
 28 thanne how gret' fylonye dignitees don to wykkyd men/ /Certes
 vnworthynesse of wykkyd men sholde be the lasse I-sene / yif they
 nere renommed of none honours/ /Certes thow thyself ne myhtest nat
 ben browht with as manye perils as þou myhtest suffren þat thow

¹ gloss: ironice.

² leaf 75.

woldest beren the magestrat *with* decorat / þat is to seyn / þat for no
peril þat myhte befallen the / by offense of the kyng theodoryke /
thow noldest nat be felawe in gouernaunce *with* decorat / whan þou
saye þat he hadde wykkyd corage of a lykoros shrewe *and* of an 4
acusor / *ne* .I. ne may nat for swyche honours Iugen hem worthy of
Reuerence þat .I. deme *and* holde vnworthy to han thylke same
honours / *now* yif thow saye a man þat were fulfild of wysdom /
Certes thow ne myttest nat deme þat he were vnworthy to the 8
honour Or elles to the wysdom of which he is fulfyld // No *quod* .I. /
/Certes dignitees apertienen proprely to vertu *and* vertu transporteth
dignite anon to thilke man to whych she hyr self is conioigned. //
And for as moche as honours of poeple ne may nat maken folk digne 12
of honour / it is wel seyn clerly / þat they ne han¹ no propre beaute
of dignite // And yit men owhten taken mor heed in thys / ffor yif
so be þat a wykkyd whyght^t be so mochel the fowlere *and* the moore
owt cast / þat he is despised of most folk / so as dignete ne may nat¹ 16
maken shrewes digne of Reuerence / the whych shrewes dignete
sheweth to moche foolk / *thanne* makith dignete shrewes rather so
moche more despised than preysed / *and* forsothe nat vnpunished /
þat is for to seyn þat shrewes reuengen hem ayeinward vp on dig- 20
netees / ffor they yilden ayein to dignetes as gret gerdoun whan they
by-spetten *and* defowlen dignetes *with* hyr vylenie / *and* for as
mochel as thow mowe knowe þat thilke verray reuerence ne may nat
comen by thyse shadwyve transitorye dignitees vnderstond now thus / 24
yif that a man hadde vsed *and* had many maner dignitees of *consules* /
and weere comyn *per* Auenture amonges straunge nasyons / sholde
thilke honour maken hym worshipful / *and* redowted of straunge foolk /
/Certes yif þat honour of poeple / weere a naturel yift to dignites / 28
it ne myhte neuer cesen nower² Amonges no manere foolk to don hys
offyce / ryht as fyre in euery contre ne stynteth nat^t to eschaufen *and*
to ben hoot / but for as mochel as for to ben holden honourable or
reuerent^t ne comyth nat to foolk of hyr propre strengthe of nature / 32
but onoly of þe false opynion of foolk þat is to seyn wenen þat
dignitees maken foolk digne of honour / Anon therefore whan þat

¹ gloss: .s. honours.² leaf 75, back.

they comyn there as folk ne knowen nat thylke dignitees / hyr
honours vanesshen away *and þat anon/ /but þat is amonges straunge*
folk maysthow seyn / ne amonges hem ther they weeren born ne
4 duren nat thylke dignitees alwey // Certes the dignite of the prouost-
trye of Rome was whylom a gret power / now is it nothyng but An
Idel name *and the rente of Senatorye a gret charge/ /And yif a*
whyht whylom hadde the office to taken heede to the vytayles of the
8 poeple / as of corn *and oother thynges he was holden amonges grete/*
/but what thyng is now more owt cast than thylke prouosttrye /
and as .I. haue seyð a lytel her-by-forð þat thylke thyng þat hath no
propre beaute of hym self resseyueth som tyme prys *and shynynge*
12 *and som tyme lesyth it / by the opynion of vsaunces / now yif þat*
dignitees thanne ne mowen nat makyn foolk digne of Reuerence *and*
yif þat dignitees wexen fowle of hyr wyll by the felthe of shrewes/
and yif dignitees lesyn hyr shynynge by chaungynge of tymes/
16 */And yif they wexen fowle by estymacyon of poeple/ /what is it þat*
they han in hem self of beaute þat owhte ben desyred / as who seyth
non / thanne ne mowen they yeuen no beaute of dignete to non oother

¶ The 4the Metur [leaf 76, margin]

20 **A**L be it so þat the prwde nero with alle hys woode luxurie /
kembde hym / *and a-paraylede hym with fayre purpres*
of tyrye *and with whyte perles/ /Algates yit throf he*
hateful to alle foolk / this is to seyn þat al was he be-
hated of alle folk / */yit this wycked nero hadde gret lorshippe / and*
24 *yaf whylom to the reuerenc; senatours the vnworshipful setes of dig-*
nitees // vnworshipful setes he clepyth heere / for þat nero þat was
so wykkyd yaf the dignetes / */who so wolde thanne resonably wenen*
þat blysfulnesse were in swyche honours / as ben yeuen by vysyos
28 shrewes . . .

¶ The 5the prose [leaf 77, margin]

32 **B**Vt Regnes *and famylyarites of kynges* May they maken a man
to ben myhty // how elles / whan hyr blysfulnesse dureth
perpetually / */but certes the olde age of tyme passed and ek*
of present tyme now is ful ensaunpyles how þat kynges
ben chaunged in to wrechchednesse owt of hyr welefulnesse / */O a*

noble thing¹ *and* a cleer thyng is power / þat is nat fownden myhty
to kepen it self // *and* yif þat power of Reaumes be auctor *and*
makere of blysfulnesse / yif thylke power lacketh on any syde /
Amenusith it nat thilke blysfulnesse *and* bryngeth in wrechednesse/ 4
/but yit al be it so þat the Reaumes of mankynde strechchen brode/
yit mot ther node ben moche folk / ouer whyche þat euery kyng
ne hath no lorshipe ne comaundement^t // And certes vp on thilke side
þat power fayleth whych þat maketh folk blysful / ryht on þat 8
same side none power entreth vndyr-nethe þat maketh hem wreches/
in this manere thanne / moten kynges han more porsyoun of wrech-
chednesse than of welefulnesse/ /A tyraunt þat was kyng of sysile/
þat hadde assayed the peril of hys estat^t / shewede by symlytude 12
the dredes of Reaumes by gastnesse of a swerd þat heng ouer the
heued of hys famyler // what thyng¹ is thanne this power / þat may
nat doon away the bytynges of bysynesse / ne eschue the prikkes of
drede/ *and* certes yit^t wolden they² lyuen in sikernesse / but they 16
may nat^t / *and* yif they gloryfye hem in hyr power/ /holdest thou
thanne þat thylke man be myhty / þat thou seyst þat he wolde don
þat he may nat doon/ *and* holdest þou thanne hym a myhty man
þat hat enuyrownede hyse sydes *with* men of armes or seruauntz / *and* 20
dredith more hem þat he maketh agast than they dredin hym / *and*
þat is put in þ^e handes of hise *seruauntz* / for he sholde seme myhty/
/but of famylieres or *seruauntz* of kynges what sholde .I. telle the
any thing / syn þat .I. my self haue shewyd the / þat Reames hem 24
self ben ful of gret feblesse / the whyche famylieres certes the Ryal
power of kynges in hool estat *and* in estat abated ful ofte throweth
adown/ /Nero constreynede Senek hyr famyler *and* hys mayster to
chesen on what deth he wolde deyen/ /Antonius comaundede þat 28
knyhtes slowen / *with* hyr swerdes papynian hys famyler/ /which
papynian þat hadde ben longe tyme ful myhty amonges hem of the
court/ *and* yit certes they wolden bothe han renounced hyr power /
of whyche two // senecke enforcede hym to yeuen to Nero hyse 32
Rychesses / *and* also to han goon in to solutarye exil // but whan the
grete weyhte / þat is to seyn of lordes power or of fortune drawith

¹ leaf 77, back.² gloss: .s. tyrauns.

hem þat sholen falle / neyther of hem ne myhte do þat he wolde/
 /what thing is thanne thylke power / þat thowgh men han it / yit
 they ben agast/ /and whanne thow woldest han it thow nart nat
 4 siker / and yif thow woldest forleten it' thow mayst nat eschuen it/
 /but wheyther swyche men ben frendes at nede / as ben conseyled
 by fortune *and* nat by vertu // Certes swyche foolk as weleful fortune
 maketh freendes / Contraryos fortune makyth hem enemys // And
 8 what pestylence is moore myhty for to a-noye a wyht than a famylier
 enemy // ./:

¶ The 5.^{the} Metur [Leaf 78, margin]

12 **W**Ho so wole be myhty he mot' daunten hys erwel corage/
 / ne putte nat hys nekke ouercomen vndyr the fowle
 reynes of lecherye/ /ffor al be it so þat thy lordshype
 strechche so fer / thath the contre of ynde quakyth at
 thy comaundementz or at thy lawes / *and* þat the last Ile in þ^e see
 þat hyhte tyle / be thral to the / yit yif thow mayst nat putten a-wey
 16 thy fowle dyrke desyrs / *and* dryuen owt fro the wrechched com-
 playntes/ /Certes it nis no powere þat thow hast. /

¶ The 6^{the} prose [leaf 79, margin]

20 **B**Vt glorye how deceyuable *and* how fowl is it ofte/ /ffor
 whych thyng nat vnskyfully a tragedyen / þat is to seyn a
 makere of ditees þat hyhten tragedies / cryde *and* seyde /
 O glorye // Glorye quod she // thow nart nothyng elles / to
 thowsandes of foolkes/ /but a gret swellere of Eres / for manye han
 had ful gret renoun / by the false opynion of þ^e poeple *and* what
 24 thyng may ben thowht fowlere thanne swyche preysynge/ /ffor
 thylke foolk þat ben preysyd falsly / they moten nedes han shame of
 hyr preysynges//And yif þat foolk han geten hem thonk of preysynge
 by hyr deser'tes / what thyng hath thylke prys eched or encesed to
 28 þ^e consience of wyse folkk' // þat Mesuren hyr good / nat by the
 Rumor of the poeple / but by the sothfastnesse of concience/ *and*
 yif it seme a fayr thyng a man to han encesed *and* spred his name /
 than folwith it / þat it is demed to ben a fowl thing/ /yif it' ne be
 32 Isprad *and* encesed / but as .I. seyde a lytul her-by-forn / þat syn

ther mot nedes ben many foolk / to whyche foolk the renou) of a man
 ne may nat comen/ /it be-falleth þat he þat thow wenest be glorios
and renomede/ /semeth in the nexte partye of the Erthes to ben /
with-owte glorye *and* *with-owhte* renou)/ /And Certes amonges thyse 4
 thynges .I. ne trowe nat þat the prys *and* grace of the poeple / nis
 neyther worthy to ben Remembred / ne cometh of wyse Iugement Ne
 is ferme *perdurably*/ /but now of thys name of gentellesse/ /what 8
 man is it þat ne may wel sen how veyn *and* how flyttinge a thyng it
 is // ffor yif the name of gentellesse be refferred to renoun *and*
 clernesse of lynage/ /thanne is gentyl name but a foreyne thyng /
 þat is to seyn to hem that gloryfien hem of hyr lynage/ /ffor it
 semeth þat gentellesse be a manere preysynge þat comth of the 12
 deserte of auncestris // And yif preysynge makyth gentillesse / thanne
 moten they nedes be gentyl þat ben preysyd // ffor which thing it
 folueth / þat yif thow ne haue no gentellesse of thy self // þat is to
 seyn preys þat comth of thy deserte / fforeyne gentylesse ne maketh 16
 the nat gentyl but certes yif ther be any good in gentylesse / .I.
 trowe it be al oonly thys/ /þat it semeth as þat a manere necessite be
 inposed to gentel men / for þat they ne sholden nat owtrayen / or
 forlyuen fro the vertuus of hyr noble kynrede 20

[The 6th. Metre, leaf 79, back]

AL the lynage of men þat ben in Erthe ben of semblable
 byrthe/ /On allone is fadyr of thynges/ /On allone
 mynystreth alle thinges/ /he yaf to þe sonne hyse beemes
 he yaf to the moene hyse hornes/ /he yaf the men to þe 24
 Erthe/ /he yaf the sterres to the heuene/ /he encloseth *with* men-
 brys the sowles þat comen fram hyse hie sete/ /thanne comyn alle
 mortal folk of noble sede / why noysen ye or bosten of yowre Eldres/
 /ffor yif thow loke yowre bygynnynge And God yowre auctor *and* 28
 yowre makere thanne nis ther no forlyued wyht/ /but yif he norysse
 hys corage vn to vyces / *and* forlete his propre burthe //

¶ The 7th prose. [*leaf 80*]

BVt what shal .I. seye of delites of bodye / of whyche delices
the desyrynges ben ful of Angwyssh/ /And the fu[l]fyllinges
of hem ben ful of penaunce/ /how gret sykenesse *and* how
4 gret soruwes vn-sufferable ryht as a manere frut of wyckyd-
nesse/ /ben thilke delyces wont to bryngen to the bodyes of folk þat
vsen hem/ /Of whyche delytes I not what Ioye may ben had of hyr
moeuynge/ /but thys wot .I. wel þat who so euere wole remenbryn
8 hym ¹Of hyse luxures / he shal wel vnderstonde þat the yssues² of
delices ben sorwful *and* sorye // And yif thylke delices mowen
makyn folk blysfyl / than by þe same cause moten thyse bestys ben
clepyd blysfyl of whyche bestys al the entencyon^o hasteth to fulfyll
12 hyr bodyly Iolyte / *and* the gladnesse of wyf *and* chyldren weere an
honest thyng / but it hath ben seyde // þat it is ouer mochel ayeins
kynde / þat chyldren han ben fownden tormentours to hyr fadres .I.
nat how manye/ /Of whyche chyldren how bytynge is euere con-
16 dycion / it nedeth nat to tellen it the / þat hast or thys tyme assayed
it / *and* art yit^t now angwyssos/ /In thys approue .I. the sentence of
my dyssyphe Eurydyppys That seyde þat he þat hath no chyldren ys
weleful by infortune /

¶ The .7.^{de} Metur [*leaf 80, back*]

20 **E**Very delit hath this / þat it Anguisseth hem *with* prikkes
þat vsen it/ /it resembleth to thise flyenge flies þat we
clepyn ben / þat after he hath shad hyse agreable honyes/
/he fleth away / *and* styngeth the hertes of hem þat ben
24 ysmyte *with* bytynge ouerlonge holdyng /

¶ The 8th prose [*leaf 81, back*]

NOw is it no dowte thanne þat thise weyes ne ben amanere
mysledynges to blysfulnesse/ /ne þat they ne mowe nat
ledyn folk thyder / as they by-heten to leden hem/ /but
28 *with* how grete harmes thise for-seyde weyes ben enlaced/
/I shal shewe the shortly/ /ffor why yif thow enforcest the to
asemble moneye / thow most by-reuen hym hys moneye þat hath it/

¹ leaf 80, back.

² gloss: .s. endes.

/and yif thow wolt shynen with dignitees thow most by-sechen
and supplien hem þat yeuen tho dignitees/ */and* yif thow coueytyst
 by honour to gon byforn oother folk / thow shal defowle thy-self
 thorw humblesse of axynge / yif thow desyrest power/ /thow shalt 4
 be a-wayte³ of thy subgit; anoyosly ben cast vndyr by many perylles //
 Axesthow glorye // thow shalt ben so destrat by aspere thinges
 þat thow shalt forgoon sykernesse And yif thow wolt leden thy lyf
 in delices / euery wyht shal despisen the *and* forleten the / as thow 8
 that art thral to thing þat is ryht fowl *and* brwtel/ /þat is to seyn
 seruauant to thy body/ /now is it thanne wel seen / how lytel *and*
 how brotel ¹possessyon they coueyten þat putten the goodes of the
 body abouen hyr owne reson/ /ffor maysthow sormounten thyse 12
 Olyfaunt; in gretnesse or weyhty of body Or maysthow ben strengere
 than the bole / maysthow ben swyftere than the tygre / by-hold the
 spaces *and* þe stablenesse / *and* the swyft^t cours of the heuene/ *and*
 stynt som tyme to wondren on fowle thinges / the whych heuene 16
 certes / nis nat rather for thyse thynges to ben wondred vp on / than
 for the reson by wych it is gouerned // but the shynyng of thy
 forme / þat is to seyn þe beaute of thy body/ /how swyfly passynge
 is it / *and* how transytorye/ /Certes it is more flyttinge than the 20
 mutabylyte of flowres of the somer seson/ /for so arystotele telleth/
 þat yif þat men hadden eyen of a beest þat hyhte lynx/ /so þat the
 lokyng of foolk myhte percen thorw the thynges þat with-stondyn
 yt / who so loked thanne in the entrayles of the body of Alcidiades/ 24
 þat was ful fayre in superfyte with-owte / it sholde seme ryht fowl/
 /And forthy yif thow semyst fayr / thy nature maketh nat þat /
 but the deceyuable or the feblesse of the eyen þat loken/ /but preyse
 the goodes of þe body as mochel as euer the lyst / So þat thow knowe 28
 Algates þat what so it be þat is to seyn of godes of the body/
 /whych þat thow wondrest vp on may ben destroyed or dyssolued / by
 the hete of a feuere of thre dayes/ /Of alle whyche forseide thinges /
 .I. may reducen this shortly in somme/ /that thyse wordly goodes / 32
 whyche þat ne mowen nat yeuen þat they be-heten / ne ne ben nat
 perfyt by congregasyon of alle goodes / þat they ne ben nat weyes

ne pathes þat bryngen man to blyfulnesse / ne makyn men to ben
 blyful //

¶ The .8.th Metur [leaf 82, back]

4 **A**Llas whych folye *and* whych ygnoraunce mys ledeth
 wandrynge wrechches fro the paath of verray goode/
 /Certes ye ne seken no gold in grene trees/ /ne ye ne
 gaderen nat presyos stones / in the vynes / ne ye ne
 8 hyden nat yowre gynnes in the hye Mountaynes to kachche fyssh/
 of whyche ye may maken Ryches festes/ /And yif yow lyketh to
 honte to Rooes / ye ne gon nat to the foordes of the water / þat
 hyhte tyrene/ /And ouer this men knowen wel the brykes *and* the
 cauernes of the see .I.-hyd in floodes // *and* knowen ek whych water
 12 ys ¹most plentyuos of whyte perles / *and* knowen whych water
 habowndeth most of Rede purple / þat is to seyn of a manere shelle
 fysh / *with* whych men dyen purple // *and* knowen whych strondes
 habownden most *with* tendre fysshes or of sharpe fysshes that
 16 hyhten Echynnys / but folk¹ suffren hem self to ben so blynde / þat
 hem ne rechcheth nat to knowe weere thilke godes ben .I.-hydd/
 /whyche þat they coueyten/ /but plowngen hem in Erthe *and* seken
 there thylke good þat sormounteht þe heuene þat bereth the sterres/
 20 /what preyere may .I. maken þat be digne to the nice thowhtes of
 men/ /but¹ .I. preye þat they coueyten Rychesse *and* honours / so
 þat whan they han geten tho false goodes *with* gret travayle / þat
 ther-by they mowe knowen the verray Goodes

¶ The 9th prose [leaf 85, back, margin]

24 **I**T suffiseth þat .I. haue shewyd hyder to // the forme of false
 welefulnesse/ /so þat yif thow loke now clerly / the ordyr
 of myn entencyon requireth / ffrom hennes forth to shewen
 the þe verray welefulnesse/ /ffor sothe quod .I. / I. se wel
 28 now þat suffysaunce may nat comen by Rychesses / ne power by
 Reames / ne Reuerence by dignitees / ne gentylesse by glorye /
 ne Ioye by / delyces / *and* hasthow wel knowen þe causes quod she
 why it is/ /Certes me semeth quod .I. þat .I. se hem ryht as thowgh

it were thorw a lytel klyfte / but me weere leuere knowen hem
more opynly of the/ /Certes quod she the resoun is al redy // ffor
thylke thing þat symply is o thing / with-owten any deuysyon //
The errour and folye of mankynde / departeth and deuydeth it and 4
mys-ledeth it and transporteth from verray and parfyt good / to
goodes þat ben false and vnparfyt // but sey me this // wenesthow þat
he þat hat nede of power / y^t hym ne lacketh no thing/ /nay quod
.I. // Certes quod she thow seyst a ryht/ /ffor yif so be þat ther ys 8
a thing / þat in any partye be feblere of power certes as in þat it
mot nedes ben nedy of foreyne help/ /Ryht so is it quod .I. /
Suffysaunce and power ben thanne of o kynde/ /so semeth it quod
.I. / And demesthow quod she / þat a thing þat is of this manere / 12
þat is to seyn suffysaunt and myhty / owhte ben despyced ¹Or elles
þat it be ryht digne of Reuerence / abouen alle thinges / Certes quod
.I. it nis no dowte / þat it is ryht worthy to ben reuerenced/ /Lat vs
quod she adden thanne reuerence to suffysaunce and to power / so 16
þat we demen þat these thre thinges be al o thing // Certes quod .I.
lat vs adden it / yif we wolen graunten the sothe/ /what demesthow
thanne quod she // is þat a dyrk thing / and nat noble þat is suffisaunt
reuerent and myhty / Or elles þat it is ryht noble / and ryht cler by 20
celebryte of renou) / /Considerere thanne quod she as we han graunted
her-by-forn / þat he þat ne hath nede of no thing / and is most
myhty and most digne of honour yif hym nedith any clernesse of
renoun / whych clernesse he myhte nat graunten of hym self // So 24
þat for lacke of thylke clernesse / he myhte seme the febelere on any
side / or the more owt cast // Glose / this to seyn nay / ffor who so
þat is suffysaunt myhty and reuerent / clernesse of renoun folweth
of the forseide thinges / he hath it al redy of hys suffysaunce // boece 28
.I. may nat quod .I. / denye it / but I mot graunte as it is / þat this
thing be ryht celebrable/ /by clernesse of renou) and noblesse /
thanne folwyth it quod she / þat we adden clernesse of renou) to the
thre forseide thinges so þat ther ne be amonges hem no difference/ 32
/this a consequens quod .I./ /this thing thanne quod she / þat ne hat
nede of no foreyne thing / and þat may don alle thinges by hyse

¹ leaf 86.

strengthes / *and* þat is noble *and* honorable // nis nat that a mery
 thing *and* a Ioyful/ /boece // but whennes quod .I. þat any sorwe
 myhte comyn / to this thing þat is swyche // Certes .I. may nat
 4 thinke Philosophie/ /than moten we graunte quod se that this thing /
 be ful of gladnesse / yif the forseide thinges ben sothe/ *and*
 certes also mote we graunten þat suffysaunce / power / noblesse /
 Reuerence / *and* gladnesse ben only diuerse by names but hyr
 8 substaunce hath no diuersite // boece // it mot nedly ben so quod .I.
 // Philosophie/ /thilke thing thanne quod she / þat is oon *and*
 symple in hys nature / the wykkednesse of men departeth yt *and*
 deuydeth it // *and* whan they enforen hem to geten partye of a
 12 thing / þat ne hath no part / they ne geten hem neyther thilke
 partye þat nis non // ne the thing all hool that¹ they ne desyre nat/
 /boece // in whych manere quod .I. P[hilosophie] thilke man quod she
 þat secheth Rychesses to flen pouerte / he ne trauayleth hym nat for
 16 to gete power¹ ffor he hath leuere ben dyrk *and* vyl // *and* ek with-
 draweth from hym self many naturel delices // ffor he nolde lese the
 moneye þat he hath asemblyd / but certes in this manere / he ne
 geteth hym nat suffisaunce / þat power forleteth / *and* þat moleste
 20 prykketh // *and* þat fylthe maketh owt cast / *and* þat dyrkenesse
 hydeth // *and* certes he þat desireth oonly power / he wasteth *and*
 schatereth rychesse / *and* despyseth delyc² / *and* ek honour þat is
 with-owte power / ne he ne preyseth glorye no thing¹ // Certes thus
 24 seesthow wel þat manye thinges faylen to hym // ffor he hath som
 tyme defaute of many necessytees/ *and* many angwyssos byten
 hym // *and* whan he ne may nat don tho defautes a wey / he ffor-
 letith to ben myhty / *and* þat is the thing þat he most desyreth //
 28 *and* ryht thus may .I. maken semlable resouns of honours / *and* of
 glorye / *and* of delic² / ffor so as euery of thyse forseide thinges is
 the same that thise oother thinges ben / þat is to seyn al oon thing //
 who so þat euer sekith to geten þat oon of thise / *and* nat þat
 32 oothre // he ne gete[t]h nat þat he desireth // boece // what seysthow
 thanne / yif þat a man coueyteth to geten alle thise thinges to
 gydere // P // Certes quod she .I. wolde seye þat he wolde geten

¹ leaf 86, back.

² *delycus, delicus.*

hym souereyn blyfulnessse/ /but þat shal he nat fynde in the
 thinges þat .I. haue shewyd / þat ne mowen nat yeuen þat they be-
 heten // boece/ /Certes no quod .I. // thanne quod she / ne sholden
 men nat / by no wey seken blyfulnessse in swyche thinges as men 4
 wene þat they ne mowen yeuen but^t o thing senglely of alle þat men
 seken // B. / I. graunte wel quod .I. ne no sothere thing ne may ben
 sayd/ /P./ // now hasthow thanne quod she / the forme and the causes
 of false welefulesse/ /now torne and flitte the eyen of thy thowght / 8
 ffor there shalthow sen a-non thilke verray blyfulnessse / þat .I.
 haue by-hyht the // boece/ /Certes quod .I. it is cler and opyn thowh
 it were to a blynde man/ /and þat shewedest thow me ful wel a lytel
 here by-forn // whan thow enforcedest the to shewe me the causes of 12
 the false blyfulnessse/ /ffor but yif I be bygylyd thanne is thilke the
 verray blyfulnessse parfyt / þat parfytly maketh a man / suffisaunt /
 myhty / honourable / noble / and ful of gladnesse // and for thow
 shalt wel knowe / þat .I. haue wel vndyrstonden thyse thinges with- 16
 in my herte/ /.I. knowe wel þat thilke blyfulnessse / þat may
 verrayly yeuen oon of the forseide thinges syn they ben al oon / .I.
 knowe dowteles þat thilke thing is the fulle blyfulnessse/ /P // O
 my norye quod she / by this opynion / .I. seye þat thow art blyful / 20
 yif thow putte this ther-to / þat .I. shal seyn/ /what is that quod
 .I. // trowesthow þat ther be any thing^t in thise erthely mortal towm-
 blynge thinges / þat may bryngen this estat/ /Certes quod .I. I
 trowe it nawht/ /and thow hast shewed me wel þat ouer thilke 24
 good ther nis no thing more to ben desired / P/ /These thinges
 thanne quod she / þat is to sey Erthely suffisaunce / and power /
 and swyche thinges / eyther they semen lykenesses of verray good/
 / Or elles it semith that they yeue to mortal foolk a manere of 28
 goodes / that ne ben nat parfyt // but thilke good þat is verray and
 parfyt / þat may they nat yeuen/ /Boece/ /I acorde me wel quod
 .I. // p/ /thanne quod she for as mochel as thow hast knowen /
 which is thilke verray blyfulnessse/ /and ek whyche thilke thinges 32
 ben / þat lyen falsly blyfulnessse / þat is to seyn þat by deceite
 semen verrey goodes // now by-houeth the to knowe whennes and

¹ leaf 87.

where thow mowe seke thilke verray blysfulnesse Certes quod .I.
that desire .I. gretly *and* haue a-byden longe tyme to herknen it /
/but for as moche quod she as it liketh to my dissipule plato in his
4 book of in tymeo þat in ryht lytel thinges / men sholden by-shechen
the help of god // what Iugest thow þat be now to done / so that
we may deserue to fynde the sete of thilke verray good/ /B //
Certes quod .I / .I. deme / þat we shollen clepen the fadyr of alle
8 goodes ffor with-owten hym nis ther nothing fownden a Ryht //
thow seyst a ryht quod she / *and* bygan anon to synge ryht thus //

The 9^{ue} Metur [Leaf 88, margin]

12 **O** Thow fadyr Creator of heuene *and* of erthes þat gouernest
this world by perdurable resoun / þat comaundest the
tymes to gon from syn þat age hadde bygynnyng/ /Thow
þat dwellest thy self ay stedefast *and* stable / *and* yeuest
alle oothre thinges / to ben moeued/ /ne foreyne causes ne cesseden
the neuere to compowne werk of floterynge matere // but oonly the
16 forme of souereyn good Iset with-in the with-owte enuye / þat
moeuede the frely/ /thow þat art alder fayrest berynge the fayre
world / in thy thowht / formedyst this world to the lyknesse
semblable of þat fayre world in thy thowht // thow drawest al thing
20 of thy souereyn ensampler / *and* comaundest þat this world parfyt-
lyche .I.-maked / haue freely hys parfyt partyes/ /thow byndest
the elementus by nowmbyres porcionables/ /þat the colde thinges
mowen acorden with the hote thinges // *and* the drye thinges with
24 the moyst thinges/ /þat the fyr þat is purest ne fle nat ouer hye /
ne þat the heuynysse ne drawn nat a-down ouer lowe / the erthes
þat ben plownged in the wateres/ /thow knyttest to-gydere the
meene sowle¹ of treble kynde / moeuyng alle thinges / *and*
28 deuydest it by membres / acordyng/ /*and* whan it is thus
deuyded / it hath a-sembled a moeuyng in to two Rowndes // it
goth to torne ayein to hym self / *and* enuyrowneth a ful deep
thowht²/ /*and* tornet the heuene by semblable ymage/ /thow by
32 euene lyke causes enhansest the sowles *and* the lasse lyues // *and*

¹ gloss : .i. anima mundi.

² gloss : .i. deus.

ablynge hem heye by lyhte cartes/ /thow sowest hem in to heuene
and in to Erthe / *and* whan they ben conuerted ¹To the by thy
 bygynnyng lawe / thow makest hem retorne ayein to the by
 ayein ledyng fyr // O fadyr yiuw thow to the thowht² / to styen vp in ⁴
 to the streyte sete³/ *and* graunte hym to enuerowne the welle of
 good // *and* the lyht yfownde / graunte hym to fychen the clere
 syhtes of hys corage in the / *and* skatere thow *and* to-breke thow
 the weyhtes *and* the clowdes of erthely heuynesse // *And* shyne ⁸
 thow by thy bryhtnesse/ //for thow art clernesse / þou art peysyble reste
 to debonayre folkes // thow thy self art by-gynnyng / berere / ledere /
 paath *and* terme / to loke on the that is owre ende //

¶ The 10the prose [*Leaf 91, back*]

FOr as moche thanne as thow hast¹ seyn / which is the forme ¹²
 of good þat nis nat parfyt² / *and* whych is the forme of good
 þat is parfyt/ /now trowe .I. þat it were good / to shewe in
 what⁴ this parfeycyon of blysfulnesse is set/ *and* in this
 thing .I. trowe þat we sholden fyrst enquere for to wyten / yif þat ¹⁶
 any swyche manere good as thilke good that thow hast dyffynysed
 a lytel heere by-forn / þat is to seyn souereyn good / may ben
 fownde in the nature of thinges // ffor that veyn ymagynacyon of
 thowght / ne deceyue vs nat⁵ / *and* putte vs ow⁶ ²⁰Of the sothfastnesse /
 of thilke thing þat is svmmytted to us / but it may nat ben
 denoyed / þat thilke good ne is/ *and* þat it nis ryht as welle⁶ of alle
 goodes / ffor alle thing⁷ þat is clepyd inparfyt⁷ / is proeued inparfyt⁷ /
 by the amenusyng of parfeycion⁷ or of thing þat is parfyt // *and* ²⁴
 ther-of comht it / þat in euery thing⁸ general / yif that⁸ men sen any
 thing / þat is inparfyt / Certes in thilke general ther mot⁸ ben som
 thing þat is parfyt/ //for yif so be þat parfeycyon is don a-wey
 men may nat thinke / ne seye fro whennes thilke thing is þat is ²⁸
 clepyd inparfyt/ //for the nature of thinges ne took not hyr
 bygynnyng of thinges amenused *and* inparfyt/ /But it procedeth
 of thinges þat ben al hoole *and* absolut⁸ // *and* dessendeth so

¹ leaf 88, back.

² gloss: .s. boecii.

³ gloss: .i. summe bone.

⁴ gloss: 'que nam': Latin prose, lf. 88, bk, 'quo nam.'

⁵ leaf 92.

⁶ gloss: .i. deus.

⁷ gloss: .i. perfecti.

⁸ gloss: .i. laws.

down in to owtterest^t thinges / *and* in to thinges empty *and* with-
owten frut/ /but as .I. haue Ishewyd a lytul her byform / þat yif
ther be a blysfulnesse þat be freele *and* veyn *and* inparfyt^t // ther
4 may no man dowte that ther nis som blysfulnesse / þat is sad.
stydefast *and* parfyt^t / /b./ /this is concluded *quod* .I. fermely *and*
sothfastly // p // but considere also *quod* she in wham this blysful-
nesse enhabyteth/ /the comune acordaunce *and* conseite of the
8 corages of men proeueþ *and* graunteth / þat God prynce of alle
thinges is good/ /ffor so as nothing ne may ben thowht^t bettre than
god / It may nat ben dowted thanne / þat he þat nothing nis bettre /
þat he nis good/ /Certes reson sheweth þat God is so good / þat it
12 proueth by verray force þat parfyt good is in hym // ffor yif God
ne is swych he ne may nat ben prinse of alle thinges / for certes som
thing possessyng in itself parfyt^t good / sholde be more worthy than
god/ /*and* it sholde semen that thilke thing weere fyrst^t / *and* eldere
16 than god // ffor we han shewyd apertly / þat alle thinges þat ben
parfyt^t ben fyrst or thinges þat ben vnparfyt^t / /And for-þy for as
moche as that my resoun / or my processes ne go nat^t a-wey with-owte
an ende // we owen to graunten / þat the souereyn god is ryhtful of
20 souereyn parfyt^t good/ /And we han establysshed þat the souereyn
good is verray blysfulnesse // thanne mot it nedes be / þat verray
blysfulnesse is set in souereyn God/ /b/ /this take I. wel *quod* I /
ne this ne may nat^t ben withseid / in no manere/ /but .I. ¹preye
24 *quod* she / see now how þou mayst proeuen holyly *and* with-owte
corupcionⁿ this þat I. haue seyde/ /þat the souereyn God is ryhtful of
souereyn good // In whych manere *quod* I. / Wenesthow awht
quod she / þat this prynce of alle thinges haue .I.-take thilke souereyn
28 good any wher owt of hym self/ /Of whych souereyn good men
proueth þat he is ful / ryht^t as thow myhtest / thinken / þat God
þat hath blysfulnesse in hym self / *and* thilke blysfulnesse þat is in
hym / weren diuers in substaunce // ffor yif thow wene þat God haue
32 resseyud thilke good owt^t of hym self/ /thow mayst wene þat he
þat yaf thike good to god / be more worthy thanne is god/ /but^t .I.
am by-knowen *and* confesse / *and* þat ryht dignely / that^t god is ryht^t

worthy abouen alle thinges/ /and yif so be þat this good be in hym
by nature // but that is is diuers fro hym by wenyngre resoun / syn
we speke of God prynce of alle thinges / faigne who so feigne may /
who was he þat hath conioigned these diuerse thinges to-gidere/ /and 4
ek at the laste / se wel þat a thing^t þat is diuers from any thing^t /
that^t thilke thing nis nat^t that same thing / ffro whych it is
vndyrstonden to ben diuerse/ /Thanne folweth it / þat thilke
thing þat by hys nature is diuerse fro souereyn good / þat 8
that thing nis nat souereyn good/ /but^t certes þat weere a felonos
corsednesse to thinken that of hym¹ / þat nothing^t is more worth ffor
alwey of alle thinges / the nature of hem ne may nat^t ben better than
his bygynnyngre // ffor whych .I. may concluden by ryht^t verray 12
resoun / þat thilke þat is bygynny[n]g of alle thinges / thilke same
thing is souereyn good in hys substaunce/ /b^t / /thow has seyð
ryht-fully *quod* .I. // p. // But we han graunted *quod* she that^t the
souereyn good is blysfulnesse/ /and þat is soth *quod* .I./ /Thanne 16
quod she moten we nedes graunten *and* confessen that^t thilke same
souereyn good be god/ /Certes *quod* I. / I. ne may nat denye ne
withstonde the resouns purposed / *and* .I. se wel þat it folweth by
strengthe of the premysses/ /loke now *quod* she yif this be proued 20
yit more fermely thus / þat ther ne mowen nat ben two souereyn
goodes / þat ben diuerse amonge hem self // ffor certes the goodes
that ben diuerse amonges hem self / þat oon nis nat^t þat þat othre is/
/ thanne ne mowen neyther ²Of hem ben *parfyt* / so as eyther of 24
hem lakketh to other/ /but þat þat nis nat^t *parfyt* / men may sen
apertly þat it is nat^t souereyn/ /the thinges thanne that ben
souereynly goode / ne mowen by no wey ben diuerse // but .I. haue
wel concluded / þat blysfulnesse *and* god ben the souereyn good / 28
ffor whyche it mot nedes ben / þat souereyn blysfulnesse is souereyn
diuynyte / nothing *quod* .I. nis more sothfast than this / ne more
ferme by resoun / ne a more worthy thing^t than god may nat ben
concluded/ /p./ /vp on these thinges thanne *quod* she / Ryht as 32
thyse geometryens whan they han shewyd hyr *proposiciouns* ben
wont to bryngen in thinges / þat they clepyen *porysmes* / or decla-

¹ *gloss*: deo.² leaf 93.

racious of forseide thinges/ /Ryht^t so wole .I. yeue the heere as a
 corolarye / or a mede of coroune ffor why for as moche as by the
 getyng of blyfulnessse men ben maked blyful / *and* blyfulnessse is
 4 diuinite/ /thanne is it manyfest *and* opyn / þat by the getyng of
 diuynyte / men ben maked blyful / Ryht^t as by the getyng of
 Iustyce / *and* by the getyng of sapiencie they ben maked wyse //
 8 Ryht^t so nedes by the semblable resoun / whan they han getyn
 deuynyte / they ben maked goddes/ /thanne is euery blyful man
 god // but certes by nature ther nis but o god / but by thy partysy-
 pasion of deuynyte / ther ne let^t ne desturbyth^t nothing that ther ne
 ben many goddes // This is *quod* .I. a fayr thing *and* *precios* / clepe
 12 it as thow wolt / be it porisme or corellarye/ /Or meede of corowne /
 or declarynges/ /Certes *quod* she nothyng^t nis fayrere than is the
 thing þat by resoun sholde ben added to thyse forseide thinges/
 /what thing^t *quod* .I. / so *quod* she as it semeth that blyfulnessse
 16 contenyth many thinges / it were for to whyten wheyther þat alle
 this thinges maken or *conioignen* as a manere body of blyfulnessse /
 be diuersite of partyes or of menbrys/ /Or elles yif any of alle
 thilke thinges be swych / þat it acomplyse by hym self the
 20 substaunce of blyfulnessse / so that^t alle these oothre thinges ben
 referred *and* browht to blyfulnessse / that is to seyn as to the chef
 of hem/ /I. wolde *quod* .I. that thow makedest me clerly to vndyr-
 stonde what thow ¹seyst^t / *and* þat thow recordedyst me the forseide
 24 thinges // haue .I. nat Iuged *quod* she / þat blyfulnessse is good / ys
 forsothe *quod* .I. *and* þat souereyn good/ /Adde thanne *quod* she
 thilke good þat is maked blyfulnessse to alle the forseide thinges /
 ffor thilke same blyfulnessse þat is demed to ben souereyn suffisaunce /
 28 thilke selue is souereyn power / souereyn reuerence / souereyn clernesse
 or noblesse / *and* souereyn delit / .Conclusio. / what seyst þou thanne of
 alle thinges / þat is to seyn / suffyssaunce / power / *and* these oothre
 thinges / ben they thanne as menbrys of blyfulnessse / or ben they
 32 referred *and* browht^t to souereyn good / ryht as alle thinges þat ben
 browht^t to the chief of hem/ /B // .I. vndyrstonde wel *quod*
 .I. / what thow purporest to seke / but .I. desire for to herkne

þat thow shewe it me / p //tak now thus the descression of this
questyoun quod / she // yif alle these thinges quod she weeren
menbrys to felicitye / than weeren they diuerse þat oon from that
oother / and swych is the nature of partyes / or of menbris that⁴
diuerse menbrys compowen a body / Certes quod .I. it hath wel
ben shewyd heere by-forn / þat alle these thinges ben alle o thing /
thanne ben they none menbrys quod she // ffor elles it sholde seme
þat blyfulnesse weere conioined / al of on membre allone / but þat is 8
a thing þat may nat be don / this thing quod .I. nis nat dowtous /
but .I. abyde to herkenen the remnaunt of thy questyon / this is
opyn and cler quod she / þat alle oother thinges ben referred and
browht to good // ffor the[r]fore is suffisaunce requeryd / for it is 12
demyd to ben good / and forthy is power requered / ffor men trowen
also / þat it be good // and this same thing mowen we thinken and
coniecten / of Reuerence and of noblesse / and of delit / thanne is
souereyn good the somme / and the cause of al þat awht ben desyred / 16
/ ffor why thilke thing þat wyth-holdeth no good in it-self / ne
semblaunce of good / it ne may nat wel in no manere be desired ne
required // and the contrarye / ffor thogh that thinges by hyr
nature / ne ben nat goode / Algates yif men wene þat they ben 20
goode / yit ben they desyred as thowgh þat they weeren verraylyche
¹Goode // and therfor is it þat men owhten to wene byryht / þat
bounte be the souereyn fyn / and the cause of alle the thinges þat
ben to requeren / but certes thilke þat is cause / for whych men 24
requeren any thing / it semeth þat thilke same thing be most
desyred / as thus yif þat a wyht wolde ryden for cause of hele / he
ne desyreth nat so mochel the moeyunge to Rydin / as the effect of
hys hele / now thanne syn þat alle thinges ben required for the grace 28
of good / they ne ben nat desyred of alle folk^t moore thanne the
same good // but we han graunted þat blyfulnesse is that thing /
for whyche þat alle these oother thinges ben desyred / thanne is it
thus that certes only blyfulnesse is requered and desired / by 32
whyche thing it sheweth clerly / that of good and of blyfulnesse / is
al oon and the same substaunce / .I. se nat quod .I. wherfore þat

¹ leaf 94.

men myhten discorden in this // And we han shewyd þat god *and*
verray blysfulnesse / is al oo thing/ /that is soth *quod* .I. thanne
mowen we conclude sikerly / þat the substaunce of God¹ is set in thilke
4 same good *and* in non oother place./

¶ The 10the Metur [*Leaf 94, back, margin*]

O Comyth alle to-gydere now / ye þat ben .I.-cawht^t *and*
ybownde *with* wyckyde cheynes // by the deceyuable delyt
of Erthely thinges enhabytyng in yowre thowht/ /he
8 shal ben the reste of yowre labours // her ys the hauene²
stable in peysyble quiete/ /this allone is the opyn refut^t to wrechches //
Glosa. This to seyn þat ye þat ben combyrd *and* desseyuyd / *with*
worldely affeccyouns / comyth now to this souereyn good / þat is god /
12 þat is refut^t to hem þat wolen comyn to hym / *textus* alle the thinges
that the Ryuer tagus yeueth yow / *with* hys goldene grauayles/ /Or elles
alle the thinges / þat the Ryuer herynus y[e]ueth *with* his rede brynke/
/Or that Indus yeueth þat is next the hote party of the world / þat
16 medleth the grene stones³ *with* the whyte⁴ / ne sholde nat cleeren the
lookyng of yowre thowht/ / but hyden rather yowre blynde corages /
with-in hyr dyrknesse/ /Al that lyketh yow heere *and* exciteth *and*
moeueth yowre thowhtes / the erthe hath norysshed it in hyse lowe
20 caues/ /but the shýnyng by whyche the heuene is gouerned / *and*
whennes he hath hys strengthe // that eschueth the dyrke ouerthrow-
nyng of the sowle/ /*and* who so may knowyn thilke lyht^t of blysful-
nesse / he shal wel seyn / þat the whyte beemes of the sonne ne ben
24 nat cleer //

¶ The .1.1. prose [*Leaf 98, margin*]

B Oece // I assente me *quod* .I. / ffor alle thise thinges ben
strongly bownden *with* ryht ferme resouns/ /How mochel
wylthow preysyn it *quod* she / yif þat thow knowe what
28 thilke good is/ /I wol preyse it *quod* .I. / by preys / *with-*
owten ende / yif it shal be-tydde me to knowe also to-gydere / god /
þat is good/ /*Certes quod* she shal .I. do the / by verray resouns/

¹ gloss : i. dei.

² gloss : i. portus.

³ gloss : i. smaragdes.

⁴ gloss : i. Margaretes.

/yif that tho thinges þat I haue concluded / a litel her byforne / dwellen
oonly in hyr fyrst graunting¹ // Boece // they dwellen graunted to the
quod .I./ /this is to seyn as who seyth / .I. graunte thy forseide
conclusiouns / haue .I. nat shewyd the quod she / þat the thinges þat 4
ben requered of many folkes ne ben nat verray goodes / ne parfytte /
for they ben diuerse þat oon fro þat oother // and so as ech of hem
is lackynge to other / they ne han no power to bryngen a good / þat
is ful and absolut / /but thanne at erste / ben they verray good / 8
whan they ben gaderid to gidere / alle in to O forme / and in on
wyrkyng / so þat thilke thinge þat is suffisaunce / thilke same be
power / and reuerence / and noblesse / and myrthe / and forsothe
but yif alle thyse thinges / ben alle oon same thinge they ne han nat 12
wherby / þat they mowen ben put in the nowmbyr of thinges þat
owhten ben requered or desyred / /boece // it is shewyd quod .I. /
ne her of may no man dowten / p / /the thinges thanne quod she
þat ne ben no Goodes / whanne they ben diuerse / and whan ¹they 16
bygynnyn to ben alle oon thing / thanne ben they goodes / ne comth
it hem nat thanne by the getyng of vnite / that they ben makid
goodes / /B. / /So it semyth quod .I. / /but alle thing þat is good quod
she grauntisthow þat it be good by the participacioun of good / or no/ 20
/ .I. graunte it quod I // thanne mosthow graunten quod she / by
semblable resoun þat oon and good be oo same thing / /ffor of thinges
of whyche þat the effect nis nat naturely diuerse / nedes the sub-
staunce mot be oo same thinge / /I ne may nat denye þat quod .I. // 24
hasthow nat knowen wel quod she / þat alle thing þat is / /hath so
longe his dwellynge and his substaunce / as longe as it is oon / /but
whan it forletyth to ben oon / yt mot nedes dyen and corumpe to
gydere // in which manere quod I. / ryht as in bestys quod she whan 28
the sowle and the body ben conioigne in oon and dwellyn togydyre /
it is clepyd a beest / and whan hyr vnite is destroyed / by the
desseueraunce þat oon from þat oother / thanne sheweth it wel / þat
it is a ded thing / and þat it nis no lengere no beest // and þe body of 32
a whyht whil it dwelleth in oo forme by coniunceyoun of menbrys /
it is wel seyn / þat it is a fygyre of man kynde / and yif the partyes

¹ leaf 98, back.

of the body ben so deuydyd / *and* disseueryd / þat oon fro þat oother /
 þat they destroyen vnite / the body forletyth to ben þat it is was
 byforn / *and* who wolde renne in the same manere by alle thinges he
 4 sholde seen þat *with-owte* dowte euery thing is in his substaunce / as
 longe as it is oon / *and* whan it forletith to ben oon / it dieth *and*
periseth / Boece // whan .I. consydere *quod* .I. manye thinges / .I. se
 non oother / *is* ther any thing thanne *quod* she þat in as moche as it
 8 lyuyth naturelly / þat forletyth the talent or appetyt of his beyng /
and desireth to come to deth *and* to corupcion / *yif* .I. consydere
quod I the beestes þat han any manere nature / of wylnyng *and*
 of nyllyng // I. ne fynde no beest / but *yif* it ben constreynyd fro
 12 *with* owte forth / þat forletith or despiseth the entensyon to lyuen
and to duren or þat wole his thankes / hasten hym to dyen ¹ffor
 euery beest / *trauaylith* hym to deffende *and* kepe the sauacion of
 hys lyf / *eschueth* deth *and* destrucioun / *B* // but Certes I dowte
 16 me of herbes *and* of trees / þat is to seyn þat I am in a dowte of
 swiche thinges as herbes or trees / þat ne han no feelyng sowles / ne
 no naturel wyrkynges seruyng to appetites / as bestis han wheither
 thei han apetid to dwellen *and* to duren / *Certes quod* she ne ther-of
 20 thar the nat dowte // now loke vp on thise herbys *and* thise trees
 they wexen fyrst in swyche places as ben couenable to hem / in
 whyche places they ne mowen nat sone dyen / ne dryen / as longe as
 hyr nature may deffenden hem / *ffor* som of hem waxen in feeldes /
 24 *and* som in Mountaignes / *and* oothre waxen in marys / *and* oothre
 cleuyn on Roches / *and* soume waxen plentyuous in sondes / *and* *yif* þat
 any wyht enforce hym to beryn hem in to oother² places / they wexen
 drye // *ffor* nature yeueth to euery thing¹ þat / þat is conuenient to hym
 28 *and* *trauaylith* þat they ne dye nat¹ as longe as they han power to
 dwellyn *and* to lyuen / *what* woltow seyn of this / þat they drawn
 alle hyr norysshynges. by hyr rootes / ryht as they haddyn hyr
 Mowthes I.-plounged *with-in* the erthes / *and* shedyn by hyr maryes²
 32 hyr wode *and* hyr bark / *and* what woltow seyn of this þat thilke
 thing / þat is ryht softe as the marye is / þat is alwey hidd in the feete
 al *with-inne* *and* þat is is defendid fro *with-owte* by the stidefastnesse

¹ leaf 99.

² gloss: .i. medulle.

of wode // *and þat* the vttereste bark is put ayenis destempraunce of
the heuene / as a defendowr myhty to suffren harm/ *and* thus certes
maystow wel sen / how gret is the diligence of nature / ffor alle
things renouelen *and* pupplisen hem *with* seed .I.-multiplied / ne ther 4
nis no man þat ne wot wel þat they ne ben ryht as a foundement *and*
edyfice for to duren / nat only for a tyme / but ryht as for to duren
perdurably by generacyon // *and* the thinges ek þat men wenen ne
hauen none sowles / ne desire they nat ech of hem by sem¹blable 8
reson to kepyn þat that is hirs / þat is to seyn þat is acordynge to hyr
nature in conseruacion of hyr beynge *and* endurynge/ ffor wher-for
elles berith Lythnesse the flaumbes vp / *and* the weyhte presseth the
erthe a down/ /but ffor as moche as thilke places and thilke moeuynges 12
ben couenable to euerich of hem/ *and* forsothe euey thing kepith
thilke þat is acordynge *and* propre to hym // ryht as thinges þat ben
contraryes *and* enemys corompen hem/ *and* yit the harde thinges as
stoones clyuen *and* holden hyr partyes to-gydere ryht faste *and* harde / 16
and deffenden hem in withstondenge þat they ne departe nat lyhtly
a twyne // *and* the thinges þat ben softe *and* fletynge as is water *and*
Eyr they departyn lyhtly / *and* yeuen place to hem þat brekyn or
deuyden hem/ /but natheles they retornen sone ayein in to the same 20
thinges fro whennes they ben arraced // but fyr *and* refuseth alle
deuysyon / ne I. ne trete nat heere now of weleful moeuynges of
the sowle þat is knowynge/ /but of the naturel entencion of thinges/
/As thus ryht as we swolwe the mete þat we resseyuen *and* ne 24
thinke nat on it / *and* as we drawn owre breth in slepyng þat we
wite it nat whil we slepyt / ffor certes in the beestys the loue of hyr
lyuynges ne of hyr beeinges ne comth nat of the wilnynges of the
sowle // but of the bygynnyngis of nature/ ffor certes thorw con- 28
streynynge causes / wil desireth *and* embraceth ful ofte tyme / the
deth þat nature dredith/ /that is to seyn as thus that a man may
ben constreynyd so by som cause that his wil desireth *and* taketh
the deth which þat nature hateth *and* dredeth ful sore/ /And som 32
tyme we seeth the contrarye / as thus that the wil of a wight / des-
torbeth *and* constreyneth þat þat nature desireth / and requereth al

¹ leaf 99, back.

wey/ /that is to sein the werk of generacion/ / by the whiche
 generacion only / dwelleth *and* is sustenyd the longe durablete of
 mortal ¹things/ /And thus this charite and this Loue þat euery
 4 thing hath to hym self ne comth nat of the moeuynge of the sowle /
 but of the entencion of nature/ /ffor the puruyance of god hat
 yeuen to thinges þat ben creat of hym / this þat is a ful gret cause /
 to lyuen *and* to duren / for which they desiren naturelly hyr lyf as
 8 longe as euer they mowen/ /ffor wych thow maist nat drede by no
 manere / that alle the thinges / that ben anywhere / that they ne
 requeren naturelly / the ferme stablenesse of perdurable dwellynge /
 and ek^t the eschuyng of destruccyon/ /B // now confesse I. wel
 12 *quod* .I. that I. see wel now certeynly / with owte dowtes / the
 thinges that whylom semeden vncerteyn to me / P. / /but *quod*
 she thilke thyng^t þat desireth to be *and* to dwellyn perdurablely / he
 desireth to ben oon/ /ffor yif þat that oon weere destroyed / /certes
 16 beynge ne shulde ther non dwellyn to no wiht // that is soth^t *quod*
 I. / /Thanne *quod* she desirin alle thinges oon / .I. assente *quod* .I.
and I haue shewyd *quod* she that thilke same oon is thilke that is
 good // B // ye for sothe *quod* I. // Alle thinges thanne *quod* she
 20 rekyren good / /And thilke good thanne maist descryuen ryht thus/
 / Good is thilke thing þat euery wyht desireth / /Ther ne may be
 thowht^t *quod* .I. no moore verray thing / for either alle thinges ben
 referred *and* browht to nowht / *and* floteryn with owte gouernour
 24 despoiled of oon / as of hir propre heued / or elles yif ther be any
 thinge / to which þat alle thinges tenden *and* hyen / that^t thing
 moste ben the souereyn good of alle goodes / P/. thanne seyde she
 thus / /O my nory *quod* she I haue gret gladnesse of the / /ffor thow
 28 hast fished in thin herte the myddel sothfastnesse // that is to
 seyn the prykke / /but this thing hath ben descouered to the / in
 that thow seydst þat thow wystem nat a lytel her by forn // what
 was that *quod* I. / /That thow ne wystem nat *quod* she whych was
 32 the ende of thinges // ¹and Certes that is the thing þat euery wiht^t
 desireth / /and for as mochel as we han gaderid / *and* comprehendyd
 that good is thilke thing that is desired of alle / thanne moten we
 nedes confessun / that good is the fyn of alle thinges /

¶ The .1.1. Metur [Leaf 100, back, margin]

WHo so that sekith soth by a deep thoght And coueyteth
 nat to ben deseyuyd by no mys weyes // lat hym rollen
and trenden with-Inne hym¹self / the Lyht of his
 inward syhte/ /And lat hym gadere ayein enclynyng 4
 in to a compas the longe moeuynge of hys thowhtes / And lat hym
 techen his corage that he hath enclosed *and* hyd / in his tresors / al
 þat he compaseth or sekith fro with owte/ /And thanne thilke thing
 that the blake cloude of errour whilom hadde y-covered shal lyhten 8
 more clerly thanne phebz hym self ne shyneth/ /Glosa/ /Who so
 wole seken the dep grounde / of soth in his thowht / *and* wol nat be
 deceuyd by false proposiciouns / that goon amys fro the trouthe //
 lat hym wel examine / *and* rolle with-inne hym self the nature *and* 12
 the propretes of the thing/ /and lat hym yit eft sones examine *and*
 rollen his thowhtes by good deliberacion or that he deme // and lat
 hym techen his sowle that it hat by naturel pryncyplis / kyndeliche
 y-hyd with-in it self alle the trowthe the whiche he ymagynith to ben 16
 in thinges with-owte // And thanne alle the dyrknesse of his mys-
 knowynge shal seen more euydently to syhte of his vndyrstondynge
 thanne the sonne ne semyth to syhte with owte forth / ffor certes the
 body bryngynge the weyhte of foryetyng / ne hath nat chasyd owt 20
 of yowre thowhte al the clernesse of yowre knowyng / ffor certeynly
 the seed of sooth haldith *and* clyueth with-in yowre corage *and* it is
 a-waked *and* excited by the wynde *and* by the blastes of doctryne/
 /ffor wherefor elles demen ye of yowre owne wyl the ryhtes whan ye 24
 ben axed // but yif so were þat the norysynges of reson ne lyuede
 .I.-plowngyd in the depthe of yowre herte/ /this is to seyn how
 sholden men demen þe sooth of any thing þat weere axed / yif ther
 neere a Roote of sothfastnesse þat weere yplowngyd *and* hyd in the 28
 nature pryncyplis / the whiche sothfastnesse lyued with-in the dep-
 nesse of the thowght/ /*and* yif so be þat the Muse *and* the doctryne
 of plato syngyth sooth // al þat euery whyht lerneth / he ne doth no
 thing elles thanne but recordeth as men recordyn thinges þat ben 32
 foryetyng

¹ leaf 101.

¶ The .1.2. prose [Leaf 104, margin]

THanne seide I thus / I acorde me gretly to plato / for thow
 remenbrist *and* recordist me thise thinges / yit the secounde
 tyme / þat is to seyn / fyrst whan I loste my memorye / by
 4 the contagios coniuncsion of the body with the sowle / *and*
 eft^t sones afterward / whan I loste it confowndyd by the charge *and*
 by the burdene of my sorwe // And thanne seide she thus / yif thow
 looke *quod* she fyrst / the thinges þat thow hast grauntyd / it ne
 8 shal nat ben ryht fer / þat thow ne shalt remenbryn thilke thing þat
 thow seydyt þat thow nystyst nat / *what thing quod* I / *by which*
gouernement quod she þat this wordyl ys gouerned // me remenbryth
 it wel *quod* .I. / *and* I confesse wel þat I ne wiste it nawght / *but*
 12 al be it so þat .I. se now from a-fer what thow purposest / *Algates*
 .I. desire yit to herkene it of the more pleynly / *thow ne wendist*
nat quod she / a litel her by-forþ þat men sholden dowte / þat this
 world nis gouerned ¹by God / *Certes quod* I / ne yit ne dowte I it
 16 nawht // ne .I. nel neuer wene þat it were to dowte / as who seith /
 but I wot wel þat god gouerneth this world / *and* I shal shortly
 answeren the / by what resouns I am browht to this / *this world*
quod I of so manye diuerse *and* contrarios parties / ne myhte neuer
 20 han ben assemblyd in o forme / *but* yif ther nere² oon þat *con-*
ioignede so manye diuerse thinges / *and* the same diuersite of hir
 natures þat so discordyn þat oon fro þat oother / moste departen /
and vn-Ioignen the thinges þat ben *conioigned* // yif ther ne weere
 24 oon þat contenede / þat he hath *conioyned and* I-bownde / *ne* the
 certeyn ordre of nature / ne sholde nat brynge forth so ordene
 moeuynges / by places / by tymes / by dooinges / by splaces / by
 qualites // yif ther ne weere oon þat weere ay stidefast dwellynge /
 28 þat ordeynede & disponede thise diuersitees of moeuynges / & thilke
 thing what so euer it be / by which þat alle thinges be makend *and*
 I-ladd / .I. clepe hym god / þat is a word þat is vsed to alle foolk /
 / *thane seyde she* / syn thow feelyst thus thise thinges *quod* she / *I*
 32 trowe þat I haue litel moore to done þat thow myhty of welefulnesse /
 hool *and* sounde / ne see eft sones thy. *contre* / *but* lat vs loken the

¹ leaf 104, back.² alterd, later, to 'ne were.'

things þat we ha purposed her by-forn/ /haue .I. nat nowmbryd
and seyð quod she / þat suffisaunce is in blysfulnesse / and we han a-
cordyd þat god is thilke same blysfulnesse // yis forsothe quod .I. //
and þat to gouerne this world quod she ne shal he neuer han nede of 4
non help fro with owte/ /ffor ellis yif he hadde nede of any help /
he ne sholde nat haue no ful suffisaunce / yis / thus it mot nedes be
quod .I./ /thanne ordeynyth he by hym self allone alle thinges quod
she // that may nat be denoyed quod I. / And .I. haue shewyd that 8
god is the same good/ /it remenbryth me wel quod .I./ /thanne
ordeynith he alle thinges by thilke good quod she / syn he which
þat we han a-cordyd to be good / gouernyth alle thinges by hym self //
and he is as a keye / and a stiere / by which / þat the ledifice of 12
this world is I-kept stable / and with-owte coroumpynge // I a-
corde me gretely quod I/ /and .I. aparseyuede a lytul her by-forn /
þat thow woldyst seye thus / al be it so þat it weere by a thinne
suspecyon/ /I. trowe it wel quod she / ffor as .I. trowe thow ledyst 16
now moore ententyfly thyne eyen to loken the verray goodes But
natles the thing þat I shal telle the yit ne shewith nat lasse to
looken² // what is þat quod I // so as men trowen quod she / and þat
ryhtfully / þat god gouernith alle thinges by the keye of his goodnesse/ 20
/ and alle these same thinges as .I. haue tawht the / hasten hem by
naturel entencyon to comen to good // ther may no man dowten þat
they ne ben gouerned voluntarily and þat they ne conuertē hem
of hir owne wil to the wil of hyr ordenoure as they that ben a- 24
cordynge and enclynge to hyr gouernoure and hyr kyng¹ / it mot
nedes be so quod .I./ /for the Reaume ne sholde nat semen blysful
yif ther weere a yok³ of mysdrawynges⁴ in diuerse partyes / ne the
sauynge of obedient thinges ne sholde nat be // thanne is ther nothing 28
quod she þat kepith his nature þat enforeith hym to goon ayein god/
/ no quod I. // and yif þat any thing enforcede hym to with-stonde
god / myhte it auaylen at the laste a-yenis hym / þat we han graunted
to ben almyhty by the ryht of blysfulnesse/ /Certes quod I al 32
owtrely it ne myhte nat auaylen hem // thanne is ther no thing

¹ leaf 105.² gloss : .i. considerandum.³ gloss : .i. iugum.⁴ gloss : .i. recusancium.

quod she þat eyther wole or may *wil*-stondyn to his souereyn good/
 /I. trowe nat *quod* .I. // thanne is thilke the souereyn good
quod she þat alle thinges gouerneth strongly / *and* ordeyneth hem
 4 softtely/ /thanne seyde I thus/ /I delite me *quod* .I. nat oonly in
 the endes or in the somme of the¹ resouns þat thou hast concluded
and proeued // but thilke wordes þat thou vsest deliten me mocho
 moore/ /so at the laste fooles þat sumtyme renden grete thinges
 8 owhten ben ashamyd of hem self // þat is to seyn ²þat we fooles þat
 reprehendnen / wikkedly the thinges þat towchen goddes gouernance/
 / we owhten ben asshamyd of owre self/ /as .I. þat seyde þat god
 refusith oonly þe werkes of men *and* ne entremetith nat of it' // p //
 12 thou hast wel herd *quod* she the fables of the poetes/ /how þe
 gyauntz assayleden the heuene *wil* the goddes / but for sothe the
 debonayre force of god desposede hem / as it was worthy / þat is to
 seyn destroyede the giauntz as it was worthi/ /but wil thou þat we
 16 ioignen to-gidere thilke same reasouns // for perauenture of swych
 coniuncyon may sterten vp som fair sparkle of soth/ /do *quod* .I. as
 the liste // weenest thou *quod* she þat God ne be almyhty / no nis in
 dowte of it' / Certes *quod* .I. no wyht ne dolteth it' / yif it be in
 20 his mynde/ /but he *quod* she þat is al-myhty / ther nis no thing
 þat he ne may/ /þat is soth *quod* .I./ /May god don yuel *quod* she/
 /nay forsothe *quod* I // thanne is yuel nothing *quod* she/ /syn þat he
 ne may nat don yuel / þat may don alle thinges // scornesthow thou
 24 me *quod* I/ /or elles pleyesthow / or desseyuesthow me / þat hast so
 wouen me *wil* thy resouns the hows of dydalus / so entrelaced / þat
 it is vn-able to be vn-laced/ /thou þat oother while entrist ther þou
 issest / *and* oother while issest ther thou entrist/ /ne fooldesthow nat
 28 to-gydere by replycacion of wordis / a manere wondyrful cercele or enuyr-
 onyng of the symplicyte deuyne/ /ffor certes a lytel her' By-forn /
 whan thou by-gunne at blysfulnesse // thou seydist þat it is souereyn
 good/ *and* seidist / þat it is set in souereyn god/ *and* seidist þat god
 32 hym self is souereyn good / *and* þat god is fulle þe blysfulnesse for
 which þou yaue me as a couenable yift' // þat it is to seyn þat no wyht
 nis blysful / but yif he be good also ther'-*wil*/ *and* seidest ek that

¹ "the" a later insertion ?

² leaf 105, back.

the forme of good¹ is the substaunce of god² *and* of blyfulnessse // *and*
 seidest þat thilke same oon is thilke same good / þat is requered *and*
 desired of alle the kynde of thynges / *and* thow³ *proeuedest* in dis-
 putynge þat God gouerneth alle the thynges of þe worlde by the 4
 gouernement; of bowonte *and* seydyt þat alle thynges / wolen obeyen
 to hym // *and* seydist þat the nature of yuel nis no thing / *and* these
 thynges ne shewedist thow nat / *with* none resouns I-taken fro *with*-
 owte / *but* by *proeues* in cerclis *and* hoomlich knowen // the whiche 8
proeues drawn to hem self hir feith *and* hyr a-cord euerich of hem
 of oother / *thane* seide she thus / I ne scorne the nat / ne pleye /
 ne desseyue the / *but* I. haue shewyd the / the thing þat^t is grettyst
 ouer alle thynges by the yift of god / that we whilom preyeden // ffor 12
 this is the forme of the deuyne substaunce / þat is swich þat it ne
 slydeth nat in to owtterest foreyne thynges / ne ne resseiveth no
 straunge thynges in hym / *but* ryht as *apermanides* seide in greec of
 thilke deuyne substaunce / he seide thus / þat thilke deuyne sub- 16
 staunce tornith the world / *and* the moeuable cercle of thynges //
 whil thilke deuyne substaunce kepith it self / *with* owte moeuynge /
 þat is to seyn / þat it ne moeueþ neuer mo / *and* yit it moeueþ alle
 oothre thynges / *but* natheles yif I haue styred resouns þat ne ben 20
 nat taken / fro *with* owte þe compas of thing of which we treten /
but resouns þat ben by-stowed / *with* in þat compas / *ther* nis
 nat why þat thow sholdest merueylen / syn thow hast lerned by the
 sentence of plato / þat nedes the wordes moten ben cosyne to þe 24
 thynges of which they spekyng

¶ The .12. Metur [*Leaf 107, back, margin*]

Blysful is þat man þat may sen the clere welle of good / *bly*-
 ful is he þat may vnbyndyn hym fro the bondes of the
 heuy erthe // the poete of trace *orpheus* þat whilom hadde 28
 ryht gret sorwe for the deth of his wyf / After þat he hadde
 makid by his wepply songes þe wodes moeuable to rennen / *and*
 hadde makyd the ryueres to stondyn styll / *and* hadde makyd the
 hertes & the hyndes to Ioignen dredeles hir sydes to cruwel lyouns / 32
 forto herknen his songe // *and* hadde makyd þat the hare was

¹ gloss : .i. boni.

² gloss : .i. dei.

³ leaf 106.

nat agast of the hownde / whiche þat was plesid by his songe //
 So whan the moste ardent loue of his wif / brende the entrayles
 of his brest/ /ne the songes þat hadden ouercomen alle thinges
 4 ne myhten nat asswagen hir lord orpheus/ /he pleynede hym of
 the heuene goodes þat weren crwel to hym/ /he wente hym to the
 howses of helle / and there he temprede hise blaundyssynge soonges /
 by resownynge strenges and spak and soonge in wepynge al þat euer
 8 he hadde resseyuyd/ /and laued owt of the noble welles of his modyr
 calyope the goddes // and he soonge with as mochel as myht of
 wepynge / and with as moche / as loue þat dowblede his sorwe myhte
 yeue hym and thechen hym/ /and he commoeuede the helle and
 12 requerede / and by-sowhte by swete preyere / the lordes of sowles in
 helle / of relesinge / þat is to seyn to yilden hym his wif/ /Cerberus
 the porter of helle with hise thre heuedes was cawht and al a-bayst for
 1 the newe songe // and the thre goddesses / furijs / and vengeressis
 16 of felonies / þat tormenten and agasten the sowles by anoy/ /woxen
 soriful and sory and wepyn teeres for pite // tho ne was nat the
 heued of yxion I-tormented / by the ouerthrowinge wheel/ /and
 tatalus þat was destroyed by the woodnesse of longe thirst despisith
 20 the flodes to drynke/ /the fowl þat hihte voltor / þat etith the
 stomak or the gyser of ticius is so fulfyld of his song þat it nil etin
 ne tyren no more / At the laste the lord and Iuge of sowles was
 moeued to misericordes and cryde/ /we ben ouercomen quod he / yiue
 24 we to orpheus his wyf to bere hym compaignye / he hath² wel
 I-bowht hir by his song / and his ditee / but we wol putte a lawe in
 this / and couenant in the yifte / þat is to seyn þat³ tyl he be owt
 of helle / yif he looke by-hynde hym / þat his wyf shal comen ayein
 28 vn to vs / but what is he þat may yiue a lawe to loueres/ /loue is a
 gret lawe and a strengere to hym self / than any lawe þat men may
 yeuen/ /allas whan orpheus and his wyf weren almost at the terminis
 of þe nyht/ /þat is to seyn at the laste bowndes of helle/ /Orpheus
 32 lookede abacward on Euridice his wyf and loste hir / and was ded/
 /this fable apartienyth to yow alle / who so euere desireth or sekith
 to lede his thowht in to the souereyn day / þat is to seyn to clernesse

¹ leaf 108.

² second *h* later.

³ ? þat later.

of souereyn god / ffor who so þat euere be so ouercomen þat he
fychche hys eyen into the putte of helle / þat is to seyn who so sette
thowhtes in erthely thinges / al þat euere he hath drawn of the noble
good celestial / he lesith it whan he loketh the helles / þat is to seyn 4
in to lowe thinges of erthe /

Explicit liber .3.^{us}

Incipit liber quartus.

The I^a prose [*margin, leaf 109*]

WHan philosophie hadde songyn softly *and* delitably
the forseide thinges / kepyng the dignite of hir
cheere / *and* the weyhte of hir wordes / .I. thanne 8
þat ne hadde nat al owterly foryetin the wepyng *and*
the Mowrnyng þat was set in Myn herte/ ¹fforbrak the entencyon
of hir þat entendede yit to seyn some oothre thinges/ /O *quod* I thow
art gyderesse of verrey lyht / the thinges þat thow hast seid me / 12
hidir to ben so cleere to me *and* so shewyng by the deuyne lookyng
of hem / *and* by the resouns that thei ne mowen nat ben ouercomyn//
and thilke thinges þat þou toldest me / al be it so þat I hadde
whilom foryeten hem / for the sorwe of the wrong þat hath ben don 16
to me/ /yit natheles thei ne weeren nat al owtrely vnknowen to me//
but this same is namely a ryht gret cause of my sorwe/ /so as the
gouernoure of thinges is good / yif þat yueles mowen ben by any
weyes/ /Or elles yif þat yueles passen *with* owte punyssing // the 20
whiche thing oonly / how worthi it is to ben wondrid vp on//
thow considerist it wel thy self certeynly / but yit to this thing
ther is yit another thing I-Ioigned more to be wondryd vp on/ /ffor
felonye is imperisse *and* flowrith ful of Rychesses/ *and* vertu nis 24
nat al oonly *with*-owte meedes / but it is cast vndyr / *and* fortroden
vndyr the feet of felonos foolk/ *and* it abieth the tormentz in
stide of wikkede felonus // of alle whiche thinges / ther nis no
wyht þat may merueylen ynowh/ /ne compleyne þat swiche things 28
ben doon in the regne of god þat alle thinges woot/ *and* alle thinges
may/ *and* ne wole nat but oonly good thinges/ /thanne seide she

thus/ /*Certes quod* she þat weere a gret meruayle / *and* an enbasshing
 with-owten ende/ /*and* wel moore horrible than al monstres/ /yif it
 weere as thow weenest/ /þat is to seyn þat in the rith ordenee hows
 4 of so mochel a fader *and* an ordenoure of meyne / þat the vesseles þat
 ben fowle *and* vyl / sholden ben honoured and he heryed/ /*and* the
 presious vesseles sholden ben defowled / *and* vyl / but it is nat so/ /for
 yif tho thinges þat .I. haue *concluded* a lytel her by-forn ben kept
 8 hoole *and* vnaced / thow shalt wel knowe by the Autoryte of god / of
 the whos regne I speke / þat certes the goode folk^t ben alwey myhty /
and shrewes ben alwey owt cast^t ¹and feble/ /ne the vices ne ben
 neuer mo with-owte peyne / ne the vertuus ne ben nat^t with-owte
 12 mede/ /*and* þat blysfulnesses comyn alwey to goode folk/ /*and*
 infortune comth alwey to wikkyd folk / *and* thow shalt wel
 knowe manye thinges of this kynde / þat shollen cesen thy
 pleyntes / *and* strengthyn the with stidfast sadnesse / *and* for thow
 16 hast seyn the forme of the verray blysfulnesse / by me þat haue
 whilom shewid it the/ /*and* thow hast knowen in whom blysfulnesse
 is I-set/ /alle thinges I tretim þat I trowe ben necessarye to putten
 forth / I shal shewe the / the wey þat shal bryngen the ayein vn to
 20 thin hows/ /*and* I shal fycchen fetheres in thi thouht / by whiche
 it may areysen in heyhte / so þat alle tribulacyon ydon^w a-wey/ /thow
 by my gydyng *and* by my paath *and* by my sledys shal mowe
 retorne hool *and* sownd in to thi contree/ / /

The fyrste metur [*margin, leaf 110, back*]

24 **I** Haue forsothe swife fetheres þat surmounten the heyhte of
 heuene/ /whan the swifte thouht hath clothid it self in the
 fetheres / it despiseth the hateful Erthes *and* surmountith the
 Roundnesse of the grete ayr/ /*and* it seth the clowdes by-
 28 hynde ²His bak / *and* passeth the heyhte of the regyon^w of the ffyr /
 þat eschaufeth by the swifte moeuynge of the fyrmament/ /til þat he
 areyseth hym in to the howses þat beren the sterres / *and* Ioyneth
 his weyes with the sonne phebus/ /*and* felawshipith the wey of the
 32 olde colde saturnis/ /*and* he ymaked a knyht of the clere sterre / þat
 is to seyn þat the thought is makyd goddes knyht by the sekyng of

¹ leaf 110.

² leaf 111.

trowthe to comyn to the verray knoleche of god/ *and* thilke thought
renneth by the cercle of the sterres/ in alle places *per* as the shynynge
nyht is painted/ *pat* is to seyn the nyht *pat* is clowdeles/ *ffor* on
nyhtes *pat* ben clowdeles it semeth as the heuene weere peyntyd with 4
diuerse ymages of sterris/ *and* whanne he hath Idoon there I-nowh
he shal forletyn the laste heuene / *and* he shal pressen and wyndyn
on the bak of the swifte firmament *and* he shal ben makid *parfit* of
worshipful lyht of god/ *ther* halt the lord of kynges the ceptre of 8
his myht / *and* a-tempreth the *gouernementus* of the world/ *and* the
shynynge Iuge of thinges stable in hymself *gouerneth* the swifte cart
or wayn *pat* is to seyn the circular moeuyng of the sonne/ *and* yif
thy wey ledith the ayein so *pat* thow be browht thider / thanne 12
wolthow seye / now *pat* / that is the contre *pat* thow requerest / of
which thow ne haddest no mynde/ *but* now it remenbryth me wel
her was .I. born/ *her* wol I fastne my degre her wole I dwelle / but
yif the liketh thanne to lokyn on the dyrknesses of the erthe / *pat* 16
thow hast forleten / thanne shalthow sen *pat* these felonos tyrauntz
/ *pat* the wrecchede pople dredith now shollen ben exiled fro thilke
fayre contre/ / /

The 2^e prose [*margin, leaf 115*]

THan seyde I thus / owh I wondre me / *pat* *þou* bihetist me 20
so grete thinges / ne .I. ne dowte nat *pat* *þou* ne mayst wel
performe *pat* thow by-hetist/ *But* .I. preye the oonly this /
pat thow ne tarye nat to telle me thilke thinges / *pat*
thow hast moeued/ *ffyrst quod* she thow moost nedes knowen / *pat* 24
goode folk ben alwey stronge *and* myhty / *and* the shrewes ben feeble
and dishert *and* naked of alle strengthes/ *and* of these thinges /
Certes euerich of hem is declared *and* shewid by other/ *for* so as
good *and* yuel ben two contraries / yif so be *pat* good be stidefast / 28
than sheweth the feblesse of yuel al opinly/ *and* yif *þou* knowe
clerly the freleness of yuel / the stidefastnesse of good is knowen/ //
but for as moche as the fey of my sentence shal be the more ferme
and haboundaunt / I wil gon by *pat* op wey *and* by *pat* oother / *and* 32
I wole conferme the thinges *pat* ben purposed / now on this side /
and now on *pat* side/ *two* thinges ther ben in whiche the effect of

alle the dedis of mankynde standith / þat is to seyn wil *and* power /
and yif þat oon of these two faylyth ther nis no thing¹ þat may be
 don / for yif þat wil lakkit¹ / ther nis no wiht þat vndirtaketh to
 4 don þat he wol nat don/ *and* yif power fayleth / the wil nis but in
 ydel *and* stant for nawht / *and* ther-of comht it þat yif thow see a
 wiht þat wolde geten þat he may nat geten thow mayst nat dowten
 þat power ne fayleth hym to hauen þat he wolde/ /this is opin *and*
 8 cler *quod* I ne it ne may nat ben denoyed in no Manere//*and* yif þou see
 a wyht *quod* she þat hath doon þat he wolde doon / þou nyht nat
 dowten þat ne hath had power to doon it/ /no *quod* I/ *and* in þat
 that euery wyht may / in þat men may holden hym myhty / as who
 12 seyth in so moche as man is myhty to doon a thing / in so mochel men
 halt hym myhty/ *and* in þat he ne may / in þat men demen hym to
 ben feble // I confesse it wel *quod* I/ /Remenbrith the *quod* she þat I
 haue gaddered / *and* shewed by forseide resouns þat al the entencion¹
 16 of the wil of mankynde which that is lad by diuerse studies hasteth
 to comen to blisfulnesse/ /it remenbrith me wel *quod* I þat it hath ben
 shewed/ *and* recordeth the nat thanne *quod* she þat blisfulnesse is
 thilke same good þat men requeren / so þat whan blysfulnesse is re-
 20 quered of alle / þat good also is requered *and* desired of alle / /it ne
 recordeth me nat *quod* I / for I haue it gretly alwey fichched in my
 memorye/ /Alle folk¹ thanne *quod* she goode *and* eke badde enforcen
 hem with owte defference of entencion to comyn to good/ /this is a
 24 verray consequence *quod* I/ *and* certeyn is *quod* she / þat by the
 getinge of good / ben men ymaked goode/ / this is certeyn *quod* I//
 thanne getin goode men þat they desiren/ /So semeth it *quod* I/ /but
 wikkede folk¹ *quod* she yif they getyn the good þat they desiren /
 28 they ne mowe nat be wikkede/ /so is it *quod* I/ /thanne so as þat oon /
and þat oother *quod* she desiren good / *and* the goode foolk¹ getin
 good / *and* nat the wikk¹ foolk¹/ /thanne nis it no dowte / þat the
 goode foolk¹ ne ben myhti *and* wikkede folk¹ ben feeble/ /who so þat
 32 euere *quod* I dolteth of this / he ne may nat considere the nature of
 thinges ne the consequence of Resouns/ *and* ouer this *quod* she / yif
 þat ther be two thinges / þat han oo same purpose by kynde / *and*

¹ leaf 115, back.

þat oon of hem pursueth *and* parfo[r]meth thilke same thing by
naturel office / *and* þat oother ne may nat doon thilke naturel office /
by folwith by other manere / thanne is *conuenable* to nature hym þat
1A-complesseth his purpos kyndeli / *and* yit he ne Acomplesseth nat 4
his owne purpos / wheyther of these two demestow for moore myhty/
/yif þat I coniecte *quod* I þat þou wolt seye / algates yit I desire to
herkne it more pleynty of the/ /thow nylyt nat thanne denoye *quod*
she þat the Moeuement of goyng nis in Men by kynde/ /no forsothe 8
quod I / ne þou ne dowtest nat *quod* she þat thilke naturel office of
goyng ne be the the office of feet²/ /I ne dowte it nat *quod* I / /thanne
quod she yif þat a wyht be myhty to moeue *and* goth vp on hise feet /
and another to whom thilke naturel office of feet lakketh enforceth 12
hym to goon crepinge vp on hise handes/ /which of these two owhte
to ben holden the Moore myhty by ryht/ /knyt³ forth the remenaunt
quod I / for no wyht ne dwteth þat he þat may gon by naturel
office of feet / ne be moore myhty / than he þat ne may nat/ /but the 16
souereyn good *quod* she / þat is eueneliche purposed to þe good folk'
and to badde / the goode folk' sekyn it by naturel office of vertuus/
/ *and* the shrewis enforcen hem to geten it by diuerse coueytise of
ertheli thinges/ /which þat nis no naturel office to getin thilke same 20
souereyn good / trowestow þat it be any other wise / nay *quod* I. /
for the consequence is opyn *and* shewinge of thinges þat I haue
graunted / þat nedes goode folk' moten ben myhty / *and* shrewes
feeble *and* vnmyhty/ /thow rennist a ryht by-forn me *quod* she / *and* 24
this is the Iugement þat is to seyn/ /I Iuge of the ryht as these leches
ben wont to hopyn of sike folk' / whan they aperceyuen þat nature is
redressed / *and* withstondith to the maledie / but for I se the now
al redi to the vndirstondinge/ /I shal shewe the moore thikke *and* 28
continuel resouns / ffor loke now how gretly shewith the feblesse *and*
infirmite of wikkede folk' þat ne mowen nat comyn to þat hir naturel
entenciuyn ledith hem / *and* yit almost thilke naturel entencion)
constreinith/ /*and* what weere to demen thanne of shrewes / yif thilke 32
naturel help hadde forletin hem/ /the which naturel help of enten-
cion) ⁴goth a-wey by-forn hem / *and* is so gret þat vnnethe it may

¹ leaf 116.² gloss: .i. pedum.³ gloss: .i. contexe.⁴ leaf 116, back.

ben ouercome/ /considere thanne how gret deffaute of power *and* how
 gret feblesse ther is in wikkede felonos folk/ /as who seyth the gretter
 thing þat is coueyted / *and* the desire nat acomplised / of the lasse
 4 myht is he þat coueyteth it *and* may nat acomplisse/ /*and* forthi
 philosophie seyth thus by souereyn good/ /ne shrewes ne requeren nat
 lyhte meedis ne veyn games / whiche they ne may folwen ne holden /
 but they faylen of thilke somme *and* of the heyhte of thinges / þat
 8 is to seyn souereyn good/ /ne thise wrechches ne comyn nat to the
 effect of souereyn good / the which they enforcen hem oonly to geten /
 by nyhtes *and* by dayes/ /in the getinge of which good the strengthe
 of good foolk^t is ful wel ysene/ /for ryht so as thow myhtest demen
 12 hym myhty of goinge þat goth on his feet^t / tyl he myhte come to
 thilke place fro the whiche place ther ne laye no wey forthere to ben
 gon / ryht so most thow nedes demen hym for ryht myhty þat getith
and ateynith to the ende of alle thinges þat ben to desired / by-yonde
 16 the whiche ende ther nis nothing to desire/ /of the which power of
 good folk^t men may conclude þat the wikked men semen to be
 bareyne *and* naked of alle strengthe/ /ffor whi forletin they vertuus
and folwen vices / nis it nat for þat they ne knowen nat^t the goodes /
 20 but what thing is moore feeble *and* more caytyf thanne is the blynd-
 nesse of ignorance/ /or elles they knowen ful wel whiche thinges þat
 they owhten folwe / but lecherie *and* coueytise ouerthrowith hem
 mys-torned/ /*and* certys so doth distemperaunce to feeble men þat ne
 24 mowen nat wrastlen ayenis the vices/ /ne knowen they nat thanne /
 wel þat thei forletyn the good wilfully / *and* tornen hem wilfully
 to vices/ /*and* in this wyse they ne forletyn nat oonly to ben
 myhty / but they forletyn al owtrely in any wise for to ben/
 28 /ffor they þat forletyn the comune fyn of alle thinges þat ben/
 /they ¹forletyn also ther-wth-al for to ben / *and* per auenture it
 sholde semen to som folk^t þat this weere a merveyle to seyen / þat
 shrewes whiche þat contienen the Moore partye of men / ne ben nat
 32 ne han no beynge/ /but natheles it is so / *and* thus stant this thing/
 /for thei þat ben shrewes / I denoye nat þat they ben shrewes / but
 I denoye *and* seye sympeli *and* pleynly þat thei ne ben nat / ne han no

beynge/ /ffor ryht as thow myhtest seyen of the carayne of a man /
þat it weere a ded man / but thow ne myhtest nat symplely callen it
a man/ /So graunte I wel forsothe þat visious folk^t ben wikked / but
I ne may nat graunten absolutly *and* symplely / þat they ben/ /for ⁴
thilke thing þat withholdeth ordre *and* kepith nature / thilke thing
is *and* hath beynge/ / but what thing þat fayleth of þat / þat is to
seyn þat he forletith naturel ordre he forletith thilke beinge þat is set
in his nature/ /but thow wolt seyn þat shrewen mowen/ /Certes þat ⁸
ne denoye I nat / but certes hyr power ne dessendit nat^t of strengthe /
but of feeblesse/ / ffor thei mowen don wikkednesses / the whiche
they ne myhte nat don yif they myhten dwellin in the forme *and* in
the doynge of good folk/ /*and* thilke power shewith ful euidently þat ¹²
they ne mowen ryht nawht/ /ffor so as I haue gadered *and* proeued a
litel her byforn þat yuel is nawht / *and* so as shrewes mowen only
but shrewednesses/ /this conclusion is al cleer þat shrewes ne mowen
ryht nawht ne han no power/ /*and* for as moche as þou vndirstonde / ¹⁶
which is the strengthe of this power of shrewes / I haue diffinissed a
litel her by-forn / þat nothing is so myhty as souereyn good/ /þat is
soth *quod* I/ /*and* thilke same souereyn good may don non yuel//
Certes no *quod* I/ /is ther any wyht thanne *quod* she þat weneth ²⁰
þat men mowen doon alle thinges/ /no man *quod* I/ /but he be ow^t
of his witte/ /but certes shrewes mowen don yuel *quod* she/ /ye wolde
god *quod* I that ¹they myhten don non/ /thanne *quod* she so as he
þat is myhty to doon oonly but goode thinges may don alle thinges / ²⁴
and they þat ben myhty to don yuele thinges ne mowen nat alle
thinges / thanne is it opin thing *and* manifest / þat they þat mowen
don yuel ben of lasse power/ /*and* yit to proeue this *conclusion* ther
helpeth me this þat I haue Ishowed her by-forn/ /þat alle power is to ²⁸
be nowmbryd among thinges þat men owhten requere/ /And I haue
shewid þat alle thinges þat owhten ben desired ben referred to good
Ryht^t as to a manere heyhte of hir nature/ /but for to Mowen don yuel
and felonie ne may nat ben referred to good/ /thanne nis nat yuel of ³²
the nowmbyr of thinges þat owhte ben desired/ /but alle power owhte
ben desired *and* required / than is it opin *and* cler þat the power ne

the Mowinge of shrewes nis no power / *and* of alle these things it
 sheweth wel þat the goode folk ben certeynly myhty *and* the shrewes
 dowteles ben vnmyhty/ / *and* it is cler *and* opyn þat thilke sentence
 4 of plato is verrey *and* soth / þat seyth þat oonly wyse men may doon
 þat they desiren/ / *and* shrewes mowen hawnten þat hem liketh/ /but
 þat they desiren þat is to seyn to comyn to souereyn good / they ne
 han no power to a-complissen þat/ /ffor shrewes don þat hem lyst /
 8 whan by the things in which they deliten / they wenen to ateyne to
 thilke good þat they desyren/ /but they ne getyn ne ateynen nat
 ther to / for vices ne comyn nat blysfulnesse/ / /

The 2^{de} Metur [*margin, leaf 118*]

12 **W**Ho so þat the couertoures of hir veyn aparayles myhte
 strepyn of these prowde kynges / þat þou seest sitten
 on heygh on hir charyes glyteringe in shynynge purple /
 enuyrowned with sorwful armures / Manassinge with
 crwel Mowth / blowinge by woodnesse of herte/ /he sholde seen
 16 thanne þat thilke lordes beren with-inne hyr corages ful streyte
 cheynes/ /for lecherie tormentith hem in þat oon syde with gredy
 venyns / *and* trowblable Ire þat arayseth in hym the floodes of
 trwblynges tormentith vp on þat oother side hyr thowht/ /Or sorwe
 20 halt hym weery *and* y-kawht / or slidinge *and* deceyuyng hope
 tormentith hem/ /*and* therefore syn þou seest oon heed / þat is to seyn
 oon tyraunt beeren so manye tyranyes / thanne ne doth thilke tyraunt
 nat that he desireth / syn he is cast down with so manye wikkede
 24 lordes / þat is to seyn with so manye vices þat han so wikkedly
 lordshippes ouer hym/ /

¶ The iij^{de} prose [*margin, leaf 120*]

28 **S**estow nat thanne in how gret fylthe these shrewes ben
 ywrappyd / *and* with which cleernesse these good foolk shynen/
 /In this sheweth it wel / þat to goode foolk ne lakketh neuer
 mo hir meedes / ne shrewes lakken neuer mo tormentz/ /ffor
 of alle things þat ben ydoon / thilke thing for which any thing is
 don / it semyth as by Ryht þat thilke thing be the Meede of þat/ /as

thus yif a man renneth in the stadie or in the forlong for the corone /
thanne lith the Meede in the corone for which he renneth/ /and I
have shewed þat blyfulnessse is thilke same good / for which þat alle
thinges ben doon / thanne is thilke same good purposed to the workes 4
of mankynde ryht as a comune meede which meede ne may ben
desseyuered fro good foolk¹/ for no wiht as by Ryht fro thennes forth
þat hym lakketh goodnesse / ne shal ben clepyd good/ /ffor which
thing folk of goode maneres hir meedes ne forsaken hem ¹neuer mo/ 8
/ffor al be it so þat shrewes wexen as woode as hem list ayenis goode
folk / yit neuer the leese the corone of wyse men shal nat fallen ne
faaden / for foreyne shrewednesse ne by-nymyth nat fro the corages of
goode foolk¹ hir propre honour / but yif þat any wiht reioyse hym of 12
goodnesse þat he hadde taken fro *with* owte / as who seyht yif þat any
wiht hadde his goodnesse of any oother man than of hym self / certes
he þat yaf hym thilke goodnesse / or elles som oother wyht myhte
be-nyme it hym/ /but for as moche as to euery wyht his owne propre 16
bownte yeueth hym his Meede / thanne at erst shal he faylen of Meede
whan he forletith to ben good/ /and at the last so as alle Meedes ben
requered for men weenen þat they ben goode / who is he þat nolde
deme / þat he that is ryht myhty of good weere part-les of the Meede/ 20
/and of what Meede shal he be gerdoned / certes of ryht fayre Meede
and ryht grete a-bouen alle Meedes/ /remenbre the of thilke noble
corolarye / þat I yat the a litel her byforn / and gadere it to-gidere
in this manere/ /so as good hym self² his blisfulnessse / thanne is it 24
cleer and certeyn þat alle good folk ben maked blyful for they ben
goode/ /and thilke folk þat ben blyful it a-cordeth and is couenable
to ben goddes/ /thanne is the Meede of goode folk¹ swich þat no day
shal enpeyren it / ne no wikkednesse ne shal derken it / ne power of 28
no wyht ne shal nat amenusen it / þat is to seyn to ben maked
goddes/ /and syn it is thus þat goode Men ne faylen neuer mo of hir
Meede / Certes no wysman ne may dowte of vndepartable peyne of
the shrewes / þat is to seyn that the peyne of shrewes ne departeth 32
nat from hem self neuer Mo / ffor so as goode and yuel and peyne
and Meedes ben contrarye / it mot nedes ben that Ryht as we seen by-

¹ leaf 120, back.² gloss: .i. ipsum bonum.

tyden in gerdown ¹of goode / þat also mot the peyne of yuel answey
 by contrarye party to shrewes/ /Now thanne so as bownte *and* prowesse
 ben the Meede to goode foolke¹ / Also is shrewednesse it self torment to
 4 shrewes/ /thanne who so þat euer is entechched *and* defowled with
 yuel / yif shrewes thanne wolen preysen hem self / may it semen to
 hem / þat they ben / with owten party of torment / syn they ben
 swiche þat the vtteriste wikkednesse / þat is to seyn wikkede thewes² /
 8 which þat is the owttereste *and* the worste kynde of shrewednesse
 ne defowleth ne entechcheth nat hem oonly but infecteth *and*
 enuenumeth hem gretly/ /*and* also looke on shrewes þat ben the
 contrarye party of goode Men / how gret peyne felawshipith *and*
 12 folueth hem / for þou hast lerned a lytel her by forn / þat alle thing þat
 is *and* hath beyng is oon / *and* thilke same oon is good / thanne is
 this the consequence / þat it semyth wel / þat alle þat is *and* hath
 beyng is good / this is to seyn as who seyth þat beyng *and* vnite
 16 *and* goodnesse is al oon / *and* in this manere it folweth thanne þat
 alle thing þat fayleth to ben good it styntyth forto be *and* forto
 han any beyng/ /wherfore³ it is / þat shrewes styntyn forto ben þat
 they weeren/ /but thilke oother forme of mankynde / þat is to seyn
 20 the forme of the body with-owte sheweth yit that these shrewes
 weeren whilom men / wher-for whan they ben peruerted *and* torned
 in to Malice / certes than han they forlorn the nature of mankynde/
 /but so oonly bownte *and* prowesse may enhawsen euery man ouer
 24 oother men / thanne mot it nedes be þat shrewes which þat shrewed-
 nesse hath cast owt of the condicion of mankynde / ben put vndyr
 the mer[i]tte *and* the desert of men/ /thanne bytydeth it / þat yif þou
 seest a wyht þat be tranformed in to vices / thow ne mayst nat weene
 28 þat he be a man/ /ffor yif he be ardaunt in aueryce / *and* þat he be a
 rauaynour / by vyolence of foreyne rychesse / thow shalt ⁴seyn þat he
 is lyke to the wolf/ /*and* yif he be felonows *and* with-owte reste *and*
 excersise his tonge to chidinges / þou shalt lykkne hym to the hownd//
 32 *and* yif he be a preuey awaytor I-hidd *and* reioyseth hym to Rauysse
 by whiles / þou shalt seyn hym lyke to the fox whelpes/ /*and* yif he be
 distempre *and* quakith for Ire / men shal weene þat he bereth the corage

¹ leaf 121.

² gloss: .i. condiciouns.

³ gloss: quo fit.

⁴ leaf 121 back.

of a lyon/ *and* yif he be dredful *and* fleynge *and* dredith thinges þat
 ne owhten nat to ben dredd^e / men shal holden hym lyk to the hert/
and yif he be slowh *and* astonyd *and* lachè he lyuyth as an asse/ *and*
 yif he be lith *and* vnstidefast of corage *and* chaungith ay hise studies / 4
 he is lykned to bryddes/ *and* yif he be plownged in fowle *and*
 vnclene luxuris / he is withholden in the fowle delices of the fowle
 sowe/ /thane folueth it þat he þat forletith bownte *and* prowesse / he
 forletith to ben a man/ /syn he may nat passen in to the condicion) 8
 of god he is torned in to a best/ / /

¶ The 3^{de} Metur [*margin, leaf 122, back*]

EVrus the wynde aryuede the sayles of vlixes duc of the
 contre of narice *and* his wandrynge shippes by the see/ / in
 to the Ile there as Cirtes / the fayre goddessse / dowhter of 12
 the sonne dwellith / þat medleth to hire newe gestes / drynkes
 þat ben towched *and* maketh with enchauntemēt^z/ *and* after þat hir
 hand myhty ouer the herbes hadde chaunged hir gestes in to diuerse
 maneres / þat oon of hem is couered his face with forme of a boere / 16
 þat oother is chaunged in to a lyoun of the contre of marmorike /
and hise nayles *and* hise teth wexen/ /þat oother of hem is neweliche
 chaunged in to a wolf / *and* howleth whan he wolde wepe / þat oother
 goth debonayrely in the hows as a tygre of Inde/ / but al be it so þat 20
 the godhed of Mercurie / þat is clepid the bryd of archadie / hath had
 mercy of the duke vlixes / bisegyde with diuerse yueles/ *and* hath
 vnbounded hym fro the pestelence of his oostesse / algates the Roweres
and the maryneres hadden by this I-drawn in to hir Mowthes *and* 24
 dronken the wikkede drynkes/ /they that weeren wexen swyn /
 hadden by this Ichaunged hir mete of bred/ /forto eten akkornes of
 okes/ /non of hir lemes ne dwelleth with hem hool / but they han
 lost the voyce *and* the body/ /oonly hyr thowht dwelleth with hem 28
 stable / þat weepith & byweyleth the Monstruous chaun^lgynges þat they
 suffren/ /O ouer lyht hand / as who seyth / O feble *and* lyht is the
 hand of cirtes the enchaunteresse / þat chaungeth the bodies of folkys
 in to bestys to regard *and* to comparisoun of Mutasion) þat is maketh 32

¹ leaf 123.

by vices/ /ne the herbis of cirtes ne ben nat myhty / for al be it so
 þat they may chaungen the lymes of the body / algates yit they may
 nat chaunge the hertes/ /ffor with-inne is Ihydd the strengthe *and*
 4 vigor of men / in the secre toure of hir hertes / þat is to seyn the
 strengthe of reson/ /but thilke venyms of vices to-drawen a man to
 hem moore myhtyly than the venym of cirtes/ /ffor vices ben so cruel
 þat they percen *and* thorw passen the corage with Inne/ /*and* thogh
 8 they ne anoye nat the body / yit vices wooden to destroyen men by
 wownde of thowht.

¶ The ferthe prose [*margin, leaf 127*]

12 **T**Han seyde I thus / I confesse *and* am a-knowe it *quod* I / ne
 I ne se nat / þat men may sayn as by ryht þat shrewes ne
 ben chaunged in to bestis by the qualyte of hyr sowles / al
 be it so þat they kepyn yit the forme of the body of man-
 kynde/ /but I nolde nat of shrewes of whiche the thowht cruel
 woodeth alwey in to destruccion of goode men / þat it weere leueful
 16 to hem to don þat/ /Certes *quod* she ne it nys nat leueful to hem /
 1As I shal wel shewe the in couenabele place / but natheles yif so
 weere þat thilke þat men weenen be leueful to shrewes weere by-
 nomen hem so þat they ne myhte nat anoyen or doon harm to goode
 20 men / Certes a gret partye of the peyne to shrewes sholde ben allegged
and releued for al be it so þat this ne seme nat credible thing^r *per*
aurenture to some folk^r / yit moot it nedes be / þat shrewes ben moore
 wrechches *and* vnsely whan they may doon *and* performe þat they
 24 coueyten / than yif they myhte nat complyssen þat they coueyten/
 / ffor yif so be þat it be wrechchednesse to wylne to don yuel / than
 is moore wrechchednesse to Mowen doon yuel / with owte whiche
 mowyng the wretched wil sholde langesse with owte effect/ /than
 28 syn þat eueryche of these thinges hath his wrechchednesse / þat is to
 seyn / wyl to doon yuel / *and* Mowyng to don yuel / it mot nedes
 be þat they ben constreynyd / by the vnselynesses / þat woolen *and*
 Mowen *and* performen felonyes *and* shrewednesses / I acorde me *quod*
 32 I / but I desire gretly þat shrewes losten some thilke vnselynysses /

þat is to seyn þat shrewes weeren despoyled of mowynge to don yuel/
/ So shullen they *quod* she / *sonnere per aenture* than thow woldest /
or *sonnere* than they hem self weene / for ther nis no thing so late
in the short bowndes of this lyf / þat is long to a-byde / *namelyche* 4
to a corage in-mortel / of whiche shrewes / the grete hope *and* the
hye compassinges of shrewednesses / is ofte destroyed by a sodeyn
ende or they ben war/ *and* þat thing establyth to shrewes the ende of
hir shrewednesse/ /for yif þat shrewednesse maketh wrechches / 8
than mot he nedes ben most wrechched þat lengest is a shrewe / the
whiche wikked shrewes wolde I demen aldermost vnsely *and* caytyfs /
yif þat hir shrewednesse ne weere fynyshed at the leste wey / by
the owtteryste deth/ /for yif I haue concluded soth of the vnselynesse 12
of shrewednesse / than shewith it cleerly þat thilke wrechchednesse is
¹*wyth*-owten ende the whiche is certeyn to ben perdurable/ /*Certes*
quod I this conclusion is hard *and* wondirful to graunte/ /but I
knowe wel þat it a-cordeth moche to the thinges þat I haue graunted 16
her by-forn/ /thow hast *quod* she the ryht estimacion of this/ /but
who so euer weene þat it be an hard thing to a-corde hym to a con-
clusion) / it is ryht þat he shewe / þat some of the *premysses* ben
false / or elles he moot shewe þat the collacions of *proposicions* nis 20
nat spedful to a necessarye conclusion/ *and* yif it ne be nat so / but
þat the *premyssys* ben ygraunted / ther nis not² why he sholde blame
the argument / for this thing that I shal telle the now ne shal nas
seme lasse wondyrful/ /but of the thinges that ben taken also it it 24
necessarye / as ho³ seyth it folweth of that which that is purposed
by-forn/ /what is that *quod* I/ /*Certes quod* she that is that thise
wykked shrewes ben moore blysfyl or elles lasse wrechches þat a-byen
the torment; that they han deseruyd / than yif no peyne of Iustice 28
ne chastysede hem / ne this ne seye I nat now / for that any man
myhte thinke / þat the maners of shrewes ben coriged *and* chastised
by *venyaunce* / *and* that they ben browht to the ryht wey by the
drede of the torment / ne for that they yeuen to oother folk ensaumple 32
to flen fro vices/ /but I vndyrstande yif in a nother manere / þat
shrewes ben moore vnsely whan they ne ben nat punyssed / al be it

¹ leaf 128.^{2, 3} *not, ho*, overline : by a corrector.

so þat ther ne be had no reson or lawe of correccyon / ne non en-
 saumple of lookynge/ *and* what manere shal that ben *quod* I / oother
 than hath be told her by-forn/ /haue we nat thanne graunted *quod*
 4 she / þat goode folk^e ben blysful *and* shrewes ben wrechches/ /yis
quod I/ /thanne *quod* she yif þat any good weere added to the
 wrechednesse of any wyht / nis he nat moore weleful than he þat
 ne hath no Medlynge of good in his solitarie wrechednesse/ /So
 8 semyth it *quod* / .I./ *and* what seystow thanne *quod* she of thilke
 wreche þat lakked alle goodes / so þat no ¹good nis medlyd in hijs
 wrechednesse / *and* yit ouer al his wykkednesse for which he is a
 wreche þat ther be yit a nother yuel anexed *and* knytte to hym//
 12 shal nat men demen hym more vnsely / than thilke wreche of
 whiche the vnselynesse is releued by the partycipacion of som good//
 whi sholde he nat *quod* I/ /thanne certes *quod* she han shrewes whan
 they ben punysshed / som what of good anexed to hyr wrechednesse /
 16 that is to seyn the same peyne þat they suffryn / which þat is good
 by the reson of Iustyce // *and* whan thilke same shrewes ascapyn *with-*
 owte torment / than han they som what moore of yuel / yit *ouer* the
 wykkednesse that they han don / þat is to seyn defaute of peyne /
 20 which defaute of peyne thow hast graunted is yuel / for the deserte
 of felonye/ / .I. ne may nat denye it *quod* I/ /Moche moore thanne
quod she ben shrewes vnsely whan they ben wrongfully delyueryd
 fro peyne / than whan they ben punysshed by ryhtful venaunce/ /but
 24 this is opyn thyng *and* cler þat it is ryht / þat shrewes ben punysshed /
and it is wykkednesse *and* wrong^e þat they escapyn vnpunysshed//
 who myhte deneye þat *quod* I/ /but *quod* she may any man deneye þat
 al that is ryht nis good / *and* also the contrarye / þat al that is wrong
 28 is wykke/ /Certes *quod* I thise thinges ben cleere I-nowh / *and* þat we
 han concludyd alyter her byforn/ /but I preye the þat thow telle me
 yif þou acordest to leten no torment to sowles after þat the body is
 endyd by the deth/ /this is to seyn vndirstandystow awht þat sowles
 32 han any torment after the deth of the body/ /Certes *quod* she yee /
and þat ryht gret / of whiche sowles *quod* she / I trowe þat some ben
 tormentyd / by asprenesse of peyne / *and* some sowles I trowe ben

¹ leaf 128, back.

exercised / by apurginge mekenesse/ /but my conseyl nis nat to
determenye of this peynes / but I haue trauayled *and* told / yit hider-
to / for thow sholdest knowe / þat the Mowynge¹ of shrewes / which
Mowynge the semyth to ben vnworthy ²nis no mowynge / *and* ek of 4
shrewes of which þou pleynedyst þat they ne weere nat punysshed /
þat þou woldest seyn / þat they ne weeren neuer mo *with-owten* the
torment; of hyr wykkednesse / *and* of the licence of Mowynge to don
yuel / þat thow preydyst þat it myhte sone ben endyd / *and* þat þou 8
woldest fayn lerne þat it ne sholde nat longe dure / *and* þat shrewes
ben Moore vnsely yif they weere of lengere durynge / *and* most
vnsely yif they weeryn *perdurable*/ *and* after this I haue shewed the
þat moore vnsely ben shrewes / whan they escapyn *with-owte* hir 12
ryhtful peyne / than whan they ben punyssed by ryhtful venaunce/
and of this sentence folweth it that thanne ben shrewes constreynyd
at the laste *with* most greuos torment / whan men weene that they
ne be nat punysshed / whan I considere thy resoun *quod* I / I ne 16
trowe nat þat men seyn any thing¹ moore verayly/ *and* yif I torne a-
yeyn to the studyes of men who is he to whom it sholde seme þat he
ne sholde nat oonly leuen these things / but ek gladly herkne hem/
Certes quod she so it is / but men may nat / for they han hire Eyen 20
so wont to the derknesse of erthely things / þat they ne may nat
lyften hem vp to the lyht of cleer sothfastnesse / but they ben lyke to
bryddes of which the nyht lyhtneth hir lookynge / *and* the day
blyndeth hem/ /for whan men lookyn nat the ordre of things / but 24
hir lustis *and* talent; / they weene þat eyther the leue or the Mowynge
to don wykkednesse or elles the schapyng *with-owte* peyne be
weleful/ /but considere the Iugement of the *perdurable* lawe / for yif
þou conferme thy corage to the beste things / þou ne hast no nede 28
of no Iuge to yeuen the prys or mede/ /for thow hast Ioynd thy self
to the moost excellent thing / *and* yif thow haue enclyned thy
studyes to the wykked things / ne sek¹ no foreyne wrekere owt of
thy self / for thow thy self / hast thyrst thy self in to wikke ³things 32
/ Ryht as thow myhtest loken the fowle erthe by diuerse tymes / *and*
the heuene / *and* þat alle other things stynten fro *with* owte / so þat

¹ gloss: .i. myght.² leaf 129.³ leaf 129, back.

thow nere neyther in heuenene ne in erthe / ne saye no thing moore /
 than sholde it semen to the as by oonly resoun of lookynge / þat
 thow weere now in the sterres / *and* now in the erthe/ /but the poeple
 4 ne lookyth nat in thise thinges / what thanne/ /shal we thanne
 aprochen vs to hem þat I haue shewyd þat they ben lyk to bestys/¹
 /*and* what woltow seyn of this/ /yif þat a man hadde al for-lorn his
 syhte *and* hadde foryetyn þat he euer sawh / *and* wende þat nothing
 8 ne faylede hym of perfeccion of mankynde / now we þat myhten sen
 the same thinges / wolde we nat weene þat he weere blynde²/ /ne also
 ne acordith nat the poeple to þat I shal seyn / the which thing
 sustenyd by a stronge fowndement of resouns / þat is to seyn that
 12 moore vnsely ben they þat don wrong to oothre folk / than they þat
 the wrong suffren / I wolde heren thylke same resouns *quod* I/
 denyestow *quod* she þat alle shrewes ne ben worthy to han torment
 //nay *quod* I/ /but *quod* she I am certeyn by many resouns þat
 16 shrewes ben vnsely/ /it acordith *quod* I./ /thanne ne dowtestow nat
quod she / þat thilke folk þat ben worthi of torment þat they ne ben
 wrechches/ /it a-cordeth wel *quod* I/ /yif thow weere thanne yset a
 Iuge or a knowere of thinges / trowestow þat men sholden tormenten
 20 hym / þat hath don the wrong/ /or elles hym þat hath suffred the
 wrong/ /I ne dowte nat *quod* I þat I nolde don satisfaccion to hym
 þat hadde suffred the wrong / by the sorwe of hym that hadden don
 the wrong/ /thanne semyth it *quod* she þat the doere of wrong is
 24 moore wrechche / þat he þat suffred wrong/ /that folweth wel *quod*
 I/ /than *quod* she by thise causes *and* by othre causes þat ben of
 enforced by the same Roote / fylthe or synne by the propre nature of
 it maketh men wrechches/ /*and* it sheweth wel / þat the wrong that
 28 men don nis ³nat the wrechednesse of hym þat reseuyth the
 wrong/ /but certes *quod* she thise oratours or aduocat3 don al the
 contrarye/ /for they enforen hem to commoeue the Iuges to han pite
 of hem þat han suffred / *and* resseyued the thinges þat ben greuos
 32 *and* aspre/ /*and* yit men sholden moore ryhtfully han pite of hem þat
 don the greuaunces *and* the wronges/ /the whiche shrewes it weere a
 moore couenable thing/ /that the accusours or aduocat3 / nat wroth

¹ *overline gloss* : *quod dicitur* (or *quasi dicat*) non. ² *gloss* : q. d. sic. ³ leaf 130.

but pitous *and* debonayre ledden tho shrewes þat han don wrong^t to
 the Iugement / ryht as men ledyn syke folk^t to the leche / for þat
 they sholden seken owt the maladies of synne by torment/ *and* by
 this couenaunt ether the entente of deffendours or aduokat^z sholde 4
 fayle *and* cesen in al / or elles yif the office of aduocat^z wolde bettre
 profyten to men it sholde ben torned in to the habite of accusacion /
 þat is to seyn they sholden accuse shrewes / *and* nat excuse hem
and ek the shrewes hem self yif it weere leueful to hem to sen at any 8
 clyfte the vertu that they han forleten / *and* sawh that they sholden
 putten adown the felthes of hir vices / by the torment^z of peynes /
 they ne owhte nat ryht for the recompensacyon for to geten hem
 bownte *and* prowesse which þat they han lost/ demen ne holden þat 12
 thilke peynes weeren torment^z to hem/ *and* ek they wolden refuse
 the attendaunce of hir aduocat^z / *and* taken hem self to hyr Iuges /
and to hir accusers/ ffor which it bytidith / þat as to the wyse folk^t
 ther nis no place Ileten to hate / þat is to seyn that ne hate hath no 16
 place amonges wyse men/ ffor no wyht nyl haten goode men / but yif
 he weere ouer mochel a fool/ *and* for to haten shrewes / it nis no reson /
 for ryht so as langwissynges is maledye of body ryht so ben vices
and synne maledye of corage/ *and* so as we ne deme nat þat they 20
 þat ben syke of hir body / ben worthy to ben hated / but rather
 worthy of pyte / wel ¹Moore worthi nat to ben hated / but for to ben
 had in pite / ben they of whiche the thowhtes ben constreynyd by
 felonows wykkednesse / þat is moore cruwel than any langwysyng 24
 of body /

¶ The ferthe Metur [*margin, leaf 130, back*]

WHat deliteth yow to exciten so grete Moeuyng of
 hateredes / *and* to hasten *and* bysyen the fatal dis-
 posicion of yowre deth with yowre propre handes / þat
 is to seyn by batayles or by kontek/ ffor yif ye axen 28
 the deth / it hasteth hym of his owne wyl / ne deth ne taryeth nat his
 swifte hors² / *and* the men þat the serpent *and* the lyown *and* þe tygre /
and the beere / *and* the boor seken to slen with hir teth/ yit thilke

¹ leaf 130, back.

² gloss : .i. disposiciones odii.

same men seken to slen euerych of hem oother / with swerd / lo for
 hir maneres ben diuerse and descordaunt / ¹they moeuen vnryhtful
 oostes and crwel batayles / and wylnen to perise by entrechaungynges
 4 of dartes / but the resoun of crwelte nis nat I-nowgh ryhtful / wiltow
 thanne yelden² a couenable gerdoun to the desertes of men / Loue
 ryhtfully goode folk and haue pite on shrewes /

¶ The fyfthe prose [margin, leaf 131, back]

8 **T**Hus se I wel quod I / eyther what blysfulnesse / or elles³ what
 vnselynesse is establyssed in the desertes of goode men / and
 of shrewes / but in this ilke fortune of poeple I se somewhat
 of good / and somewhat of yuel / ffor no wyse man hath
 leuere ben exiled / poore / and nedy / and nameles / than for to
 12 dwellen in his Cyte and flowren of Rychesses / and be redowtable by
 honour / and strong of power / for in this wyse more clerly / &
 more wytnessefully is the office of wyse men I-treted / whan the
 blysfulnesse and the powste of gouernours is / as it were I-shadd
 16 amonges poeples / þat be nesshebors and subgitz / syn þat namely
 prysoun lawe / and these oothre tormentz / of laweful peynes / ben
 rather owed to felonos citezeins / for the whiche felonos ⁴cetezeins /
 tho peynes ben establysshed than for good folk / thanne I meruayle
 20 me gretly quod I / why þat the thinges ben so mys entrechaunged /
 þat tormentz of felonyes pressen and confownden goode folk / and
 shrewes rauysshon medes of vertu and ben in honours and in gret
 estat / and I desire ek for to weten of the what semyth the to ben
 24 the resoun of this so wrongful a conclusion / for I wolde wondre wel
 the lasse yif I trowede þat al these thinges / weeren medled by
 fortunous happe / but now hepyth and eneresith myn astonyenge /
 /God / gouernour of thinges / þat so as god yeueth ofte tymes to
 28 goode men goodes and myrthes / and to shrewes yuelis and aspre
 thinges / and yeueth ayeinward to goode folk hardnesses and to
 shrewes he grauntyth hym hir wyl / and þat they desiren / what
 defference thanne may ther be by-twixen þat þat god doth / and þe
 32 happe of fortune / yif men ne knowe nat the cause why þat it is / ne

¹ leaf 131.

^{2,3} Yelden, elles, *interlined by corrector.*

⁴ leaf 132. (The z of cetezeins is the 3 of tormentz, &c.)

it nis no Merueyle *quod* she thowhg / þat men wenen þat ther be
somwhat folyssh *and* confuse / whan the resonð of the ordre is
vnknowe / but al thogh þat þou ne knowe nat the cause of so gret a
disposicion / natheles for as moche as god the goode *gouernour* 4
atemprith *and* *gouernith* the world / ne dowte the nat þat alle
thinges ben doon a ryht.

¶ The fyfthe Metur [*margin, leaf 132, back*].

W Ho so þat ne knowe nat the sterres of arctour / I-torned
neygh to the souereyn contrè or poynt / þat is to seyn 8
I-torned nygh to the souereyn pool of the fyrmament //
and wot nat why the sterre boetes passeth or gaderith
hise weyues / *and* drencheth his late flambes in the see / *and* whi þat
boetes the sterre vnfoldith his ouerswifte arysynges / thanne shal he 12
wondryn of the lawe of the heye eyr¹ / *and* ek yif þat he ne knowe nat
why þat the hornes of the fulle Moene wexen paale *and* Infect by
bowndes ²of the derke nyht³ / *and* how the Moene dyrk *and* confuse
discouereth the sterres / þat she⁴ hadde Icouered by hir cleere visage / 16
/the comune erroure moeueth folk^t *and* makyt weery hyr basynnes of
bras by thilke strokes / þat is to seyn that ther is a manere of poeple
þat hihte coribandes þat weenen þat whan the moene is in the eclipse /
þat it be enchauntyd / *and* therefore for to rescowe the moene they 20
betyn hyr basyns *with* thilke strokes / ne no man ne wondrith whan
the blases of þe wynd chorus beten the strondes of the see / by
quakyng floodes / ne no manne wondrith whan the weyhte of sonwh
I-hardyd by the colde is resolued by the brennyng hete of phebz the 24
sonne / for her sen men redely the causes / but the causes I-hid þat is
to seyn in heuene trowblen the brestys of men / the moeuable poeple
is astonyd of alle thinges þat comyn selde *and* sodeynly in owre age /
but yif the trowbly erreure of owre igncraunce departede fro vs / so 28
þat we wysten the causes / why þat swyche thinges by-tyden / certes
they sholden cese to seme wondres

¹ *gloss* : vel heuene, in a later hand.

³ *gloss* : .i. eclipsis.

² leaf 133.

⁴ *gloss* : .s. Luna.

¶ The syxte prose [*margin, leaf 139*].

THos is it *quod* I / but so as þou hast yeuen or by-hyhte me /
to vnwrappen the hyd causes of thinges / *and* to discouere me
the resouns couered with dyrknesses .I. prey the þat þou
4 deuyse *and* Iuge me of this matere / *and* þat þou don me to
vndirstondyn it / for this meracle or this wondyr / trowblith me ryht
gretly / *and* thanne she a lytel what smylynge seyde / þou clepist me
quod she to telle thing þat is grettest of alle thinges þat mowen ben
8 axed / *and* to the whiche question vnnethes is ther awht Inogh to
lauen it / as who seyth vnnethes is ther suffisauntly any thing to
answere parfytly to thy question / for the matere of it is swych / þat
whan o dowte is determyned *and* kut away / ther wexen oother
12 dowtes with-owte nowmbyr / ryht as the heuedes wexen of ydre the
serpent þat Ercules slowh / ne ther ne weere no manere ne non ende /
but yif þat a wyht constreynede tho dowtes by a ryht lyfly *and*
quyk fyre of thowht / þat is to seyn bi vigour / *and* strengthe of wit /
16 /for in this matere men weeren wont to maken questions of the
symplicite of the puruyaunce of god / *and* of the ordyr of destine /
and of sodeyn happe / *and* of the knowynge *and* predestinacion
diuine / *and* of the lyberte of fre wille / the whiche thinges þou
20 thy self aperceyuyst wel / of what wyht they ben / but for as mochel
as the knowinge of these thinges / is a manere porcion of ¹the medicine
of the / al be it so þat I haue lytel tyme to don it / yit natheles I
wol enforen me to shewe somewhat of it / but al thogh the norys-
24 ynges of dite of musike deliteth the / þou most suffren *and* for-beryn
a litel of thilke delite / wyle þat I weue² to þe resouns yknyt by
ordre / as it liketh to þe *quod* I so do / So spak she ryht as by
another bygynnyng *and* seyde thus / the engendryng of alle thingis
28 *quod* she / *and* alle the progression of Muable nature / *and* al þat
moeueth in any manere taketh his causes / his ordre / *and* his formys /
of the stableness of the dyuine thowght / *and* thilke deuyne
thowht þat is yset *and* put in the towr / þat is to seyn in the heyhte
32 of the symplicite of god / stablyssyth many manere gyses to thinges /
þat ben to done / the whiche manere / whan þat men looken it / in

¹ leaf 139, back.

² gloss: *contexo*.

thilke pure klenesse of the diuine intelligence / it is yclepyd puruyaunce / but whan thilke manere is referred by men / to thinges þat it moueth *and* disponith / thanne of olde men it was clepyd destyne/ /the whiche thinges¹ / yif þat any wyht looketh wel in his 4 thowht / the strengthe of þat oon *and* of þat oother / he shal lyhtly mowen sen / þat these two thinges ben diuerse/ /for puruyaunce is thilke deuyne reson / þat is enstablysshed / in the souereyn prynce of thinges / the whiche puruyanþe disponith alle thinges/ /but 8 destine is the disposicion) *and* ordinaunce clyuyng to moeuable thinges / by the whiche disposicion / the puruyaunce knytteth alle thinges in hir ordres/ /for puruyanþe embraceth alle thinges to hepe / al thogh þat they ben diuerse / *and* al thowgh they ben Infynyte/ 12 /but destyne departeth *and* ordeynyth alle thinges / syngulerly *and* dyuydyd / in moeuynge / in places in formes / in tymes as thus/ /lat the vnfoldinge of temporel ordynaunce / assemblyd / *and* oonyd / in the lookyng of the dyuyne thowt/ /is puruyaunce// 16 *and* thilke same ²assemblynge / & oonyng deuyded *and* vnfolden by tymes / lat þat ben called destyne/ /*and* al be it so þat these thinges ben diuerse / yit nathes hangith þat oon of þat oother// for why the ordyr destynal procedith of the symplycite of puruy- 20 aunce/ /for ryht as werkman þat aperceyuyth in his thoght the forme of the thing þat he wol make / *and* moeueth the effect of the werk / *and* ledith þat he hadde lokyd by-forn in his thowht / symplely / *and* presently / by temporel ordinaunce/ /certes ryht so god dispo- 24 nith in his puruyaunce syngulerly *and* stablely / the thinges þat ben to done/ /but he amynstryth in many maneres *and* in diuerse tymys by destyne/ /thilke same thynges þat³ he hath desponed / thanne weyther þat destyn[e]⁴ be exercysed owther by some dyuyne 28 spyrit; seruauþ; to the deuyne puruyaunce / or elles by som sowle⁵ / or elles by alle nature seruyng to god / or elles by the celestial moeuynge of sterres / or elles by vertu of angelys / or elles by the diuerse subtylte of deuelys / or elles by any of hem / or elles by 32 hem alle/ /the destinal ordynaunce is ywouen⁶ *and* a-complyssed/ /certes it is opyn thing þat the puruyaunce is an vnmoeuable / *and*

¹ gloss : .s. prudentia & fatum. ² leaf 140. ³ thynges þat by corrector.

⁴ n by corrector.

⁵ gloss : .i. anima mundi.

⁶ gloss : .i. textitur.

symple forme of thinges to done/ /and the moeuable bond / and the
temporel ordynaunce of thinges / whiche þat the deuyne symplycite
of puruyaunce / hath ordeynyd to done / þat is destine/ /for which it
4 is¹ / þat alle thinges þat ben put vndyr destyne / ben certes subgitz to
poruyaunce / to whiche puruyaunce destyne it self is subgit and
vndyr/ /but some thinges ben put vndyr puruyaunce þat surmownten
the ordynaunce of destyne / and tho ben thilke þat stably ben y-
8 feched negh to the fyrste godhed / they sormownten the ordre of
destynal moeuablete/ /for ryht as of cercles þat tornen a-bowte a same
centre / or a-bowte ²a poynte/ /thilke cercle þat is innerest / or most
with Inne / ioyneth to the symplesse of the Myddel / and is as it
12 weere a centre or a poynt to þat oother cercles / þat tornen a-bowten
hym/ /And thilke þat is owtterest compased / by a large enuyronnyng /
is vnfolden by largere spaces / in so moche as it is fertherest³ fro the
myddele symplycite of the poynt/ /and yif ther be any thing þat
16 knytteth and felawshippith hym self to thilke myddel poynt/ /it is
constreynyd in to symplycite / þat is to seyn in to vnmoeuablete / and
it cesith to ben shad and to fletyn diuersely/ /ryht so by semblable
reson thilke thing þat departeth fyrthest fro the fyrst thowht of god /
20 it is vnfolden and summytted to grettere bondes of destyne/ /and
in so moche is the thing moore fre and laus fro destynye as it axeth /
and holdeth hym nere to thilke centre of thinges / þat is to seyn / god//
and yif the thing clyueth to the stydefastnesse of the thoght of god /
24 and be with-owte moenyng/ /certes it sormowntyth the necissite of
destyne/ /thanne ryht swych comparyson as it is of skylyng⁴ to
vndyrstondyng⁵ /and of thing þat is engendryd / to thing þat is /
and of tyme to eternite / and of þe cerkle to the centre/ /ryht so is
28 the ordre of moeuable destyne / to the stable symplycite of puruyaunce /
thilke ordynaunce moeueth the heuene / and the sterres / and
atempryth the elymentz to gydere amonges hem self / and trans-
formeth hem by entrechaungeable mutasion / and thilke same ordre
32 newith ayein alle thinges growyng and fallyng⁶ a-down / by sem-
blable progression⁷ of sedes / and of sexes/ /þat is to seyn Male and
femele/ /and this ilke ordre constreyneth the fortunys and the dedes

¹ gloss : quo sit. ² leaf 14^o, back. ³ ferthere alterd. ⁴ gloss : .i. ratiocinacio.

⁵ gloss : .i. intellectio.

⁶ gloss : .i. accidencia.

⁷ gloss : .i. issu.

of men by a bond of causes / nat able to be vnbownde¹/ /the whiche
destynal causes / whan they passen owt fro the bygynnynges of the
vnmoeuable puryaunce / it mot ²nedes be / þat they ne be nat
Mutable / *and* thus ben the thinges ful wel ygouerned/ /yif þat the 4
symplicite dwellynge in the dyuyne thocht shewith forth the ordre
of causes vnable to ben I-bowed³/ *and* this ordre constreynyth by
his propre stablete / the Moeuable thinges / or elles they sholden
fleten folylly/ /ffor which it is þat alle thingys semen to ben *confus* 8
and trowble to vs men/ /for we ne mowen nat considere thilke ordyna-
aunce/ /Natheles the propre manere of euery thing dressinge hem
to goode disponith hem alle / for ther nis no thing don for cause of
yuel / ne thilke thing þat is don by wykkede folk⁴ / nis nat don for 12
yuel/ /the wheche shrewes as I haue shewyd ful plentiously seken
good/ /but wykked errour mystorneth hem / ne the ordre comynge
fro þe poynt of souereyn good /ne declynyth nat fro his bygynnynge/
/but þou mayst seyn what vnreste may ben a worse confusion) / than 16
þat goode men han somtyme aduersite / *and* somtyme prosperite/
/and shrewes also han now thinges þat they desiren *and* now thinges
þat they haten/ / wheyther men lyuen now in swych hoolnesse of
thowht / as who seyth / ben men now so wyse / þat swyche folk⁵ as 20
they demen to ben good folk⁶ or shrewes / þat it moste nedes ben
that folk⁷ ben swyche as they wenen/ /but in this manere the domes
of men discorden / þat thilke men þat some folk⁸ demen / worthy
of mede / oother folk⁹ demen hem worthy of torment/ /but lat vs 24
graunte / I pose that som man may wel demen or knowen the goode
folk *and* the badde/ /may he thanne knowen *and* sen thilke Inneryste
a-tempraunce of corages / as it hath ben wont to ben seyde of
bodies/ /as who seyth / may a man spekyn *and* determinen of a- 28
tempraunces in corages / as men weere wont to demen or spekyn of
complexions *and* a-tempraunces of bodies¹⁰/ /ne it ne is nat an vn-lyk
myracle to hem þat ne knowen it nat/ /as who seyth / ¹¹but it is lik
a merueyle or myracle to hem þat ne knowen it nat / why that swete 32
thinges ben couenable to some bodies þat ben hoole / & to some
bodies bittere thinges ben couenable / *and* also why þat some syke

¹ gloss : i. indissolubile.² leaf 141.³ gloss : i. indeclinabile.⁴ gloss : quia dicitur non.⁵ leaf 141, back.

folk^t ben holpen *with* lyhte medicynes / *and* some folk^t ben holpen
with sharpe medicynes/ /but natheles the leche þat knowith the
manere / *and* the atemprance of hele and of maledye ne merueylith of
4 it nothing/ /but what oother thing semith hele of corages but bownte
and prowesse / *and* what other thing semyth maledye of corage but
vices/ /who is ellis kepere of good or dryuere a-wey of yuel/ /but god
gouernour *and* lechere of thowhtes/ /the wheche god whan he hath
8 by-holden from the heye toure¹ of his purueaunce / he knowith what
is cou²nable to euery wyht/ *and* leueth hem þat he wot þat is
cou²nable to hem/ /lo her-of comth *and* her-of is don this noble
myracle of the ordre destynal / whan god þat al knowith doth swyche
12 thing of which thing^t þat vnknowynge folk^t ben astoned/ /but for to
constreine as who seyth / but for to comprehende *and* telle a fewe
things of the deuyne depnesse / the whiche þat mannes resoun may
vndirstonde/ / /thilke man þat þou wenest to ben ryht Iuste *and* ryht
16 kepynge of equite / the contrarye of þat semyth to the deuyne
purueaunce þat al wot/ / *and* lukan my famyler telleth that the
victories cawse lykede to the goddes/ *and* the cause ouercomen
lykede to caton/ /thanne what so euere þou mayst sen þat is don in
20 this world vn hoped / or vnwenyd / certes it is the ryhte ordre of
things/ /but as to thy wykkede opynyon / it is a confusion/ /but .I.
sopose that som man be so wel I-thewed þat the deuyne Iugement
and the Iugement^t of mankynde acorden hem to-gydere of hym / but
24 he is vnstedefast of corage / þat yif any aduersite come to hym he
wol foreletyn *par* aenture to continue Innocence / by the whiche he
ne may nat withholden ³fortune/ /thanne the wyse dispensacion of
god / sparith hym⁴ the whiche man aduersite myhte enpeyren / for
28 þat god wol nat suffren hym to trauayle to whom þat trauayle nis nat
couenable / Anothir man is *parfy*t in alle vertus *and* is an holy man
and negh to god / so þat the puruyauce of god wolde demen / þat
it weere a felonye þat he weere towchid *with* any aduersites / so þat
32 he wol nat suffre þat swych a man be moeued *with* any bodyly
maledye/ /but so as seyde a phylosophre the moore excellent by me//
he seyde in grec / þat vertuus han edified the body of the holy man/

¹ gloss : i. spectacula. ²—² by a corrector. ³ leaf 142. ⁴ gloss : .s. man.

/and oftyme it bytydeth þat the somme of thinges þat ben to done is taken to gouerne to goode folk/ /for þat the malyce haboundaunt of shrewes sholde ben abated/ /and god yeuith and departeth to oothre folk' prosperites and aduersites ymedled to hepe after the qualite of 4
hir corages / and remordith some folk' by aduersite / for they ne sholde nat wexen prowde / by longe welefulnesse/ /and oother folk' he suffreth to ben trauaylyd with harde thinges / for þat they sholden confermen the vertus of corages / by the vsage and excercitacion 8
of pacience / & oother folk' dredyn moore than they owhten the whiche they myhten wel beeryn / and thilke folk god ledith in to experience of hymself by aspre and sorwful thinges/ /and many oother folk' han bowht honourable renoun of this world by the prys of 12
the gloryous deth/ /and som men þat ne mowen nat ben ouercomen by tormentz / han yeuen ensauple to othre folk' / þat vertu may nat ben ouercomyn by aduersitees / and of alle thinges ther nis no dowte / þat they ne ben don ryhtfully / and ordenely to the profyt 16
of hem / to whom we sen thise thinges bytyde/ /for certes þat aduersite comth som tyme to shrewes / and som tyme þat that they desiren it comth of thise forseide / cawses/ /and of sorwful thinges þat bytyden to shrewes / certes no man ne wondrith / for alle men 20
wenen þat they han wel deseruyd 'it' and þat they ben of wykkede meryte / of whiche shrewes the torment som tyme agastyth oothre to don felonies / and som tyme it amendith hem þat suffren the tormentz// and the prosperite þat is yeuen to shrewes sheweth a gret argument 24
to goode folk' what thing they sholden demen of thilke welefulnesse / the whiche prosperite men sen ofte seruen to shrewes/ /In the which thing .I. trowe þat god dispensith for per auenture the nature of som man is so ouerthrowenge to yuel / and so vncouenable / þat 28
the nedy pouerte of his howshold myhte rather egren hym to don felonyes/ /and to the Maledie of hym god pittyth remedie to yeuen hym Rychesses / and som oother man byholdeth his conscience defowled with synnes / and makith comparison of his fortune and of 32
hym self / and dredith per auenture þat is blysfulnesse / of which the vsage is Ioyeful to hym / þat the leesyng of thilke blysfulnesse /

ne be nat sorwful to hym / *and* therfor he wol chaunge his maneres /
 / *and* for he dredith to leese his fortune / he forletith his wykked-
 nesse / /to oothre folk' is welefulnesse y-yeuen vnworthyly / the
 4 wheche ouerthroweth hem in to distruccon) þat they han desseruyd /
 / *and* to som oothre folk is yeuen power' to punyssen / for þat it shal
 be cause of *contumacion*) *and* excercisyng to goode folk' / *and* cause
 of torment to shrewes / /for so as ther nis non alyauce by-twixe
 8 goode folk' *and* shrewes / ne shrewes ne mowen nat acordy amonges
 hem self / *and* why nat / for shrewes discorden of hem self by hire
 vices / the whiche vices alto-Renden hir consciences / *and* don ofte
 tyme thinges / the whiche thingis whan they han don hem / they
 12 demen þat tho thingis ne sholden nat han ben don / /ffor which
 thing thilke souereyn *purueaunce* hath maked ofte tyme faire myracle /
 so þat shrewes han maked shrewes to ben goode men / for whan þat
 som shrewes sen þat they suffren / wrongfully felo¹nyes of oother
 16 shrewes / they wexen eschauftet in to hate of hem / þat anoyeden
 hem / *and* retornen to the frut of vertu / whan they to ben vnlyk to
 hem þat they han hated / /Certes only this is the deuyne myht / to
 the wheche myht. yuelis ben thanne goode / whan it vseth the yuelis
 couenably / *and* draweth owt the effect of any goode / as who seyth
 þat yuel is good oonly to the myht of god / /for the myht of god
 20 ordeynith thilke yuel to good / /for oon ordre enbrasith alle thinges /
 so þat what wyht þat departeth fro the resoun of thilke ordre which
 þat is assyngned to hym / algates yit he slydith in to a nother ordre /
 /so þat no thing' nis leueful to folye in þe Reame of the deuyne *pur-*
 24 *u*aunce / as who seyth / nothing nis *with-owten* ordinaunce / in
 the Reame of þ^e deuyne *puru*aunce / syn þat the Ryht stronge god
 gouernith alle thinges in this world / /ffor it nis nat leueful to man to
 comprehenden by wit / ne vnfolden by word / al the subtyl ordin-
 28 *au*nces *and* disposicion)s of the deuyne entente / /ffor oonly it owhte
 suffise to han looked / þat god hym self makere of alle natures
 ordeynyth *and* dressyth alle thinges to goode wyl þat he hasteth to
*with*holden the thinges þat he hath maked / in to his semblaunce /
 32 þat is to seyn for to *with*holden thinges in to good / for he hym self

is good/ /he chasith owt al yuel fro the bowndes of his *communalyte* /
 by the ordre of necessite destynable/ /ffor which it folwith þat yif
 þou looke the *puruyauce* ordeynynge the thinges þat men wenen
 ben *outraious* / or habowndant in Erthis/ /þou ne shalt nat sen in no 4
 place no thing of yuel/ /but I se now that þou art charged *with* the
 weyhte of the questyon / *and weerey with* the lengthe of my reson
 And that thow abydyest som swetnesse of songe / tak thanne this
 drawht / and whan þou art wel refreshed *and refect* / thow shal be 8
 moore stydefast to styne in to heyere questyouns/ /

¶ The syxte Metur [*margin, leaf 144, back*]

IF þou wys wilt demyn in thy pure thowht / the Ryhtes or the
 lawes of the heye thonderere / þat is to seyn of god/ /loke þou
and byhold the heyhtes of the souereyn heuene/ /there kepyn 12
 the sterres by ryhtful alliaunce of thinges hyr olde pees/ /the
 sonne I-moened by his rody ffyr ne distorbeth nat the colde clerke
 of the Moene/ /ne the sterre Iclepyd the bere¹ / þat enclynyth his
 rauyssynge cours abowten the souereyn heyhte of the worlde/ /ne the 16
 same sterre vrsa nis neuer mo wasshen in the depe westrene see/
 ne coueytith nat to deeyn² his flaumbes in the see of the occian / al
 thogh he³ se oothre sterres I-plownged in the see/ /*and* hesperus the
 sterre bodith *and* tellith alwey the late nyhtes/ /*and* lucifer the sterre 20
 bryngeth ayein the cleere day/ /*and* thus maketh loue entrechange-
 able the *perdurable* courses/ /*and* thus is discordable batayle I-pu-
 owt of the contre of þ^e sterres/ /this acordaunce atemprith by euenelyk
 maneres the elymentz / þat the moyste thinges stryuyng *with* the 24
 drye thinges / yeuen place by stowndes/ /& the colde thinges Ioynen
 hem by feyth to the hote thinges / *and* that the lyhte fyr arysith in
 to heyhte / and the heuy erthes aualen by hyr weyhtes/ /by thise
 same causes the flowry 3er⁴ yildeth swote smelles in the fyrste somer 28
⁴seson) warmynge/ /*and* the hote somer dryeth the cornes / *and*
 autumpne comth ayein heuy of applis / *and* the fletynge reyn by-
 dewith⁵ the wynter / this atempraunce norissith *and* bryngeth forth
 alle thing þat berith lyf in this world / And thilke same atempranþe 32

¹ gloss: .i. vrsa.

² gloss: .i. tingere.

³ gloss: i. stella.

⁴ leaf 145.

⁵ gloss: .i. irrigat.

rauyssynge hidith *and* by-nymith / & drenchith vndir the laste deth
 alle thinges I-born / Amonges these thinges sitteth the heye makere /
 kyng / *and* lord / welle *and* bygynnyng / lawe *and* wys Iuge / to
 4 don equite / *and* gouerneth *and* enclynith the brydlis of thinges / *and*
 tho thinges þat he sterith to gon by moeuynge / he witdrawith *and*
 arestith *and* affermeth moeuable or wandryng thinges / //for yif þat
 he ne klepede nat ayein the ryht goynge of thinges / *and* yif þat he
 8 ne constreynede hem nat este sones in to Rowndnesses enclynede the
 thinges þat ben now continued by stable ordinaunce / they sholden
 departen from hir welle / þat is to seyn from hir bygyng / *and*
 faylen / þat is to seyn torne in to nowht / /this is the comune loue to
 12 alle thinges / *and* alle thinges axen to ben holden by the fyn of good /
 for elles ne myhten they nat lasten / yif they ne come nat eft sones
 ayein by loue returned to the cause þat hath yeuen hem beyng / þat
 is to seyn to god / /

¶ The seuende prose [*margin, leaf 146, back*].

16 **S** Estow nat thanne / what thinge folweth alle the thinges þat I
 haue seyde / what thinge quod I / Certes quod she al owtrely /
 þat alle fortune is good / *and* how may þat be quod I / now
 vnderstand quod she / so as alle fortune wheyther¹ so it be
 20 loyeful fortune / or aspre fortune / is yeuen eyther by cause of ger-
 donyng / or ellys of excersisinge of good folk¹ / or ellis by cause to
 punnyssen / or elles chastysen shrewes / thanne is alle fortune good /
 the whiche fortune is certeyn / þat it be eyther ryhtful / or elles pro-
 24 fitable / /forsothe this is a ful verray reson quod I / *and* yif I con-
 sidere the puruyançe / *and* the destyne / þat þou tawhtest me a lytel
 her byform / this sentence is sustenyd by stydefast resouns / /but yif
 it lyke vnto the / lat vs nowmbren hem amonges thilke thinges / of
 28 whiche þou seydist a litel her byform that þey ne weere nat able to
 ben weened to þe poeple / /why so quod she / /for þat the comune word of
 men quod .I. mys-vseth this manere speche of fortune / *and* seyn ofte
 tymes þat the fortune of som wyht is wykkede / /wyltow thanne quod
 32 she þat .I. aproche a lytel to the wordes of the poeple / so þat it

¹ leaf 147.

seme nat to hem þat I be ouermoche departed as fro the vsage of man-kynde / as þou wolt quod I / demestow nat quod she that alle thing þat profitith is good / yis quod I / and certes thilke thing that excersisith / or corigit profitith / I confesse it wel quod I / thanne 4 is it good quod she / why nat quod I / but this is the fortune quod she of hem þat eyther ben put in vertu and bataylen ayeins aspre thingis / or alles of hem þat eschwen and declynen fro vices / and taken the wey of vertu / this ne may I nat denye quod I / but 8 what seystow of the myrre fortune / þat is yeuen to good folk¹ / in gerdoun / demyth awht the poeple þat it is wykked / nay forsothe quod I / but they demyn as it soth is / þat it is ryht good / and what seystow of þat oother fortune quod she / þat al thogh þat it be aspre / 12 and restreynith the shrewes by ryhtful torment / weenith awht the poeple þat it be good / nay quod I / but the poeple demyth þat it is most wrechched of alle thinges þat may ben thoght / war now and loke wel quod she lest þat we in folwyng the opynyon of the poeple / 16 haue confessyd and concludyd thing þat is vnable to ben weened to the poeple / what is that quod I / Certes quod she it folwith or comth of thinges þat ben graunted / þat alle fortune what so euer it be / of hem þat ben eyther in possession of vertu / or in the ences of vertu / 20 or elles in the purchasyng of vertu / þat thilke fortune is good // and that alle fortune is ryht wykkede to hem þat dwellyn in shrewednesse / as who seyth / and thus weenith nat the poeple / that is soth quod I / al be it so þat no man dar confesse it / ne by-knowen 24 it / why so quod she / for ryht as the stronge man / ne semyth nat to abayssen¹ or disdaignen as ofte tyme as he herith the noyse of þe batayle / ne also it ne semyth nat to þe wyse man to beeryn it greuosity as ofte as he is lad in to the stryf of fortune / for bothe to 28 þat oon man and ek to þat oother thilke difficulte is the matere / to þat oon man of ences of his glorios renoun / and to þat oother man to confyrme his sapience / þat is to seyn to the asprenesse of his estat / for þefore is it called vertu / for þat it sustenith and enforseth by 32 hise strengthis þat it nis nat ouercomyn by aduersitees / ne certes þou þat art put in the ences or in the heyhte of vertu / ne hast nat

¹ leaf 147, back.

comyn to fletyn *with* delices / *and* for to wellen in bodely luste / /thow
 sowest or plawntest a ful egre batayle in thy corage ayenis euery
 fortune / for þat the sorwful fortune ne confownde the nat / ne þat
 4 the merye fortune ne corumpe the nat / /Ocupye the Meene by styde-
 fast strengthes / /for al þat euer is vndir the Meene / or elles al þat
 ouerpassith the Meene despisith welefulnesse / /as who seyth it is
 vicious / *and* ne hath no Meede of his trauayle / /for it is set in yowre
 8 hand / as who seyth it lith in yowre powere / what fortune yow is
 leuest / /þat is to seyn good or yuel / /for alle fortune þat semyth sharp
 or aspre / yif it ne excersyse nat the good folk / ne chastiseth the
 wykked folk / it punysseth

¶ The seuende Metur [*margin, leaf 148, back*]

12 **T**He wrekere attrides / þat is to seyn Agamenon / þat wrowhte
and continuede the batayles by .X. 3er recouered *and* purgede
 in wrekyng by the destrucsyon of troye / /the loste chaum-
 brys of maryaage of his brothir / /this is to seyn þat he
 16 Agamenon wan ayein Elyne þat was Menelaus wyf his brother / /In
 the mene while þat thilke Agamenon desirede to yeun sayles to the
 grekyssh nauye / *and* bowhte ayein the wyndes / by blod / /he
 vnclothede hym of pyte of fadyr / /and the sory preest yeuith in
 20 sacryfyng the wretched kuttynge of throte of the dowhter / /þat is
 to seyn þat Agamenon let kuttyn the throte of his dowhter¹ by the
 preest to maken allyaunce *with* his goddes / *and* for to han wynde
with whiche he myhte wenden to troye / /ytakus þat is to seyn vlixes
 24 by-wepte his felawes ylorn / the whiche felawes the feerse poliphemus
 liggynge in his grete caue hadde fretyn / *and* dreynt in his empty
 wombe / /but natheles poliphemus wood for his blynde visage / yald to
 vlixes Ioye by his sorwful teeres / this is to seyn þat vlixes smot owt the
 28 eye of poliphemus / þat stood in his forehed / for whiche vlixes hadde
 Ioye / whan he say poliphemus wepyng *and* blynde / /hercules is cele-
 brable for his harde² trauayles / he dawntede the prowde centauris half
 hors half man / *and* he byrafte the dispoyllyng from the erwel lyon /
 32 þat is to seyn he³ slowh the lyon *and* rafte hym his skyn / /he smot the

¹ gloss : .s. ephigeniam.

² leaf 149.

³ gloss : .s. hercules.

brydys þat hyhten arpiis¹ *with certeyn arwys / he rauysshede applis fro the wakyng dragown / and his hand was the moore heuy for the goldene metal / he drowh cerberus the hownd of helle by his treble cheyne / he ouercome as it is sayd hath put an vnmeke lord foddre to his 4 erwel hors / this to seyn þat hercules slowgh dyomedes / and made his hors to freten hym / and he ercules slowgh Idra the serpent and brende the venym / and achelows the flood defowlede in his forhed dreynte his shamefast visage in his strondes / this to seyn þat 8 achelous koude transfigure hym self in to diuerse lyknesses / and as he fawht *with erkules* at the laste he tornede hym in to a bole / and hercules brak of oon of hise hornes / and he² for shame hidde hym in his ryuer / and he Ercules cast adown antheus the gyaunt in the 12 strondes of lybye / and kacus apaysede the wraththes of enander / this to to seyn þat hercules slowgh the monstre kacus and apaysede *with þat deth* the wraththe of enander / and the brysteled boor markede *with scomes* the shuldres of herkules / the whiche sholdres 16 the heye clerke of heuene sholde thriste / and the laste of his laborus was þat he sustenyd the heuene vp on his nekke vnbowed³ / and he deseruede efte sones the heuene to ben the prys of his laste trauayle / goth now thanne ye stronge men ther as the heye way of the grete 20 ensauple ledith yow / O nyce men why nake ye yowre backes / as who seyth. O ye slowe and delicat men / why flee ye aduersytes / and ne fyhten nat ayenis hem by vertu to wynnen the Mede of the heuene / ffor the erthe ouercomyn ⁴yeuith sterres / this to seyn / þat 24 whan þat erthely lust is ouercomyn / a man is maked worthy to the heuene*

¶ The fyrste prose [*margin, leaf 151*]

SHe hadde seyde *and* torned by cours of hir reson to some oothre thinges to ben trectyd *and* to ben ysped / thanne seyde I / Certes ryhtful is thin amonestyng / and ful digne by 28 autorite but þat þou seydist whilom þat the questyon of thy dyuyne puruiauunce is enlaced *with* many oother questiouns / I vnderstonde wel *and* proeue it by the same thing / but I axe yif þat þou wenest þat hap be any thing in any weys / and yif þou weenest þat hap 32

¹ gloss : in þe palude of lyrne.

² gloss : s. Achelous.

³ gloss : i. inflexe.

⁴ leaf 149, back.

be any thing / what it is / thanne *quod* she I haste me to yilden *and*
 assoylen to the dette of my byhest / *and* to shewen *and* openen the
 wey / by which wey þou mayst come ayein to thy contre / *but* al be
 4 it so / þat the thinges which þat þou axest ben ryht profitable to
 knowe / *and* yit ben they diuerse somewhat fro the paath of my *purpos* /
and it is to dowten þat þou ne be maked weery by mys weyes / so
 þat þou ne mayst nat suffice to mesuren the ryht wey / *ne* dowte the
 8 ther-of nothing *quod* I / *ffor* for to knowen thilke thinges to-gedere /
 in the whiche thinges I delite me gretly / þat shal ben to me in
 styde of reste / syn it nis nat to, dowten of the thinges folwinge /
 whan euery syde of thy disputacion shal han ben stydefast to me by
 12 vndowtous feyth / thanne seyde she / þat manere wol I don the /
 & bygan to speken ryht thus / *Certes quod* ¹she yif any wyht def-
 fenysse hap in this manere þat is to se yng / hap is bytydyng² I-
 browht forth by foolissh moeuynge / *and* by no knettyng of causes /
 16 / .I. conferme þat hap nis ryht nawht in no wyse / *and* .I. deme al
 owtrely / þat hap nis ne dwelleth but a voyce / as who seyth but an
 Idel word / *with*-owten any sygnificacion of thing submitted to þat
 vois / for what place myhte ben lefte or dwellynge to folye *and* to
 20 disordenaunce / syn þat god ledith *and* constreynyth alle thinges by
 ordre / *for* this sentence is verray *and* soth þat nothing ne hath his
 beyng of nawht / to the whiche sentence none of these olde folk¹ ne
with-seyde neuere / al be it so þat they ne vndirstondyn ne meneden
 24 it nawht by god prince *and* bygynnere of werkyng / *but* they
 casten as a manere fowndement of subiect material / þat is to seyn of
 the nature of alle resoun / *and* yif þat any thing is woxen or comyn
 of no cawses / thanne shal it seme þat thilke thing is comyn or woxen
 28 of nawht / *but* this ne may nat ben don / thanne is it nat possible /
 þat hap be any swych thing as I have diffinysshed a lytel her byforn /
 / how shal it thanne be *quod* I / *nys* ther thanne no thing þat by ryht
 may be clepyd / eyther hap or ellis auenture of fortune / ar is ther
 32 awht / al be it so þat it is hidd fro the poeple to which these wordes
 ben conuenable / *Myn* Aristotulis *quod* she / in the book of his phisik¹
 diffynyssheth this thing by short reson / *and* nehg to the sothe / *In*

¹ leaf 151, back.² gloss: .i. euentum.

which manere *quod* I/ /as ofte *quod* she as men don any thing for grace
 of any oother thing/ /and an oother thing than thilke thing þat men
 entenden to don / by-tydith by some causes / it is clepyd hap/ /Ryht
 as a man dalf the Erthe by cause to tylyng of the feeld / & fownde 4
 there a gobet of gold by-doluen/ /thanne weenen folk / þat it is byfalle
 by fortunows bytydyng/ /but for sothe it nis nat of nawht / for it hath
 hise propre ¹causes of wise causes / the cours vnforeseyn *and* vnwar
 semyth to han maked hap / for yif the tylyere of the feld ne dolue nat 8
 in the Erthe *and* yif the hydere of þe gold / ne hadde hidde the gold
 in thilke place / the gold ne hadde nat ben fownde / these ben thanne
 the causes of the a-briggyng of fortuit hap / the which abreggyng
 of fortuit hap comth of causes encowntryng *and* flowyng to-gydere 12
 to hem self / *and* nat by the entencion of the doere / for neyther the
 hidere of the gold / ne the deluere of the feeld / ne vndirstoden nat
 þat the gold sholde han ben fownde/ /but as I sayde it bytydde / *and*
 ran to-gydere þat he dalf there as þat oother hadde hyd the gold/ 16
 /now may I thus diffynesse hap/ /hap is an vnwar bytydyng of
 causes assembled in thingis þat ben don for som oother thing but
 thilke ordre procedyng / by an vn-eschuable byndyng to-gydere /
 which þat descendith fro the welle of puruyaunce / þat ordeynyth 20
 alle thinges / in hir places / *and* in hir tymes / maketh þat the
 causes rennen *and* assemblyn to gydere /

¶ The fyrste Metur [*margin, leaf 152, back*]

Tigris *and* eufrates resoluen *and* spryngen of oo welle in the
 kragges of the Roche of the contre of a-chemenie / ther as the 24
 fleyng batayle ficheth hir dartes returned in the brestis
 of hem þat folwen hem/ /*and* soone affter tho same Ryueres
 tigris *and* eufrates/ vnloynen *and* departen hir wateres *and* yif they
 comyn to-gyderes / & ben assembled *and* clepyd to-gydere in-to 28
 o cours / thanne moten thilke thinges fletyn to-gydere / which þat
 the water of the entrechaungyng² flod bringith the shippes / & the
 stokkes arraced with the flood moten assemblyn / *and* the wateres .I.
 medlyd wrappith³ or implieth many fortunel happis or maneres/ /te 32

¹ leaf 152.

² gloss: .i. alterni.

³ gloss: .i. implicat.

whiche wandrynge happes natheles / thilke declynge¹ lownesse of
the erthe / *and* the flowinge ordre of the slydyng whater *gouernith* /
ryht so fortune þat semyth as þat it fletith *with* slaked or vn-
4 *gouernede* brydles / it suffreth brydles / þat is to seyn to ben *gouerned* /
/*and* passeth by thilke lawe / þat is to seyn by thilke *deuyne*
ordenance

¶ The 2^{de} prose [*margin, leaf 153, back*]

8 **T**His vndirstonde .I. wel / *and* I acorde me þat it is ryht as
þou seyst / *but* I axe yif ther be any liberte of fre wil in
this ordre of causes / þat clyuen thus to-gidere in hym self /
/or elles .I. wolde witen yif þat the destynal cheyne con-
streynith the mouynges of the corages of men / *yis quod* she ther is
12 liberte of free wil / *ne* ther ne was neuere no nature of reson / þat it
ne hadde liberte of ffree wil / *for* euery thing þat may natureli vsen
reson / it hath doom by which it decernith *and* demyth euery thing /
þanne knoweth it by it self things þat ben to fleen *and* things þat
16 ben to desiren / *and* thilke thing þat any wyht demyth to ben desired /
þat axeth or desireth he / *and* fleeth thilke thing þat he troweth to
ben fleen / *wherfore* in alle thinges þat reson is / in hem also is
liberte of wyllynge / *and* of nyllynge / *but* .I. ne ordeyne nat as who
20 seyht / I ne graunte nat / þat this liberte beeuene lyk in alle thinges
/*for* why in the souereynes dyuynes substaunces / þat is to seyn in
spiritz / Iugement is moore cleere / *and* wil nat .I. coromped / *and*
myht redy to spedyn things þat ben desired / *but* the sowles of
24 men moten needes be moore free / *whan* they looken hem in the
speculacion or lookynge of the deuyne thoght / *& lasse* ²ffree whan
they slyden in to the bodies / *and* yit lasse free whan they ben
gaderyd to-gidere *and* comprehendyd in erthely membris / *but* the
28 laste *seruage* is / *whan* þat they ben yeuen to vices / *and* han yfalle
from the possession of hir propre reson / *ffor* after þat they han cast
away hir eyen fro the lyht of the souereyn sothfastnesse to lowe things
and derke / *Anon* they derkin by the clowdes of ignorançe / *and* ben
32 trowblyd by felonos talentz / to whiche talentz / *whan* they aprochen
and asenten / thei hepin *and* encresin the *seruage* / which they han

¹ *gloss* : decliuitas.

² leaf 154.

Ioynd to hem self / *and* in this manere they ben kaytyfs fro hir propre liberte / the whiche thinges natheles / the lookynge of the deuyne puryaunce seth / þat alle thinges byholdith *and* seth fro eterne / *and* ordeynith hem euerych in hir merites / as they ben 4 predestynat/ *and* it is seyð in grek / þat alle thinges he seth *and* alle thinges he herith

¶ The .2.^{de} Metur [*margin, leaf 154, back*]

HOmer with the hony Mowth / þat is to seyn/ /Homer with the swete dites / syngith / þat the sonne is cleer by pure 8 lyht/ /natheles yit ne may it nat by the Infirme lyht of his beemes / brekyn or percen / the inward entrailes of the erthe / or elles of the see/ /so ne seth nat god makere of the grete world / to hym þat looketh alle thinges from an hegh ne withstondith 12 no thinges by heuynesse of herthe/ /ne the nyht ne withstondith nat to hym by the blake klowdes/ /thilke god seeth in oo strokk¹ of thoght / alle thinges þat ben / or weeren / or shollen comyn / *and* thilke god for he loketh *and* seth alle thinges alone/ /thow mayst seyñ 16 þat he is the verray sonne

¶ The .3.^{de} prose [*margin, leaf 157, back*]

THanne seyde .I. now am I confownded by a moore hard dowte than I/ /was/ /what dowte is þat *quod* she/ /for certes I coniecte now / by whiche thinges þou art trowbled/ /it 20 semyth *quod* I to repugnen *and* to contraryen gretly / þat god knowit byforn alle thinges / *and* þat ther is any freedom of liberte/ /for yif so be þat god looketh alle thinges byforn / ne god ne may nat ben desseyuyd in no manere / than mot it nedes ben / þat 24 alle thinges by-tyden / the whiche þat the puryaunce of god hath seyñ byforn to comyn/ /for which yif þat god knowith byforn / nat oonly the werkes of men / but also hir conseyles *and* hir willes// thanne ne shal ther be no liberte of arbitre/ /ne certes ther ne may 28 be noon oother dede / ne no wil but thilke/ which þat the deuyne puryaunce þat ne may nat ben desseyuyd hath feelyd byforn/ /for yif þat they myhten wrythen away in oothre manere / than they ben

¹ gloss: i. ictu

purueyed/ /thanne sholde ther be no stydefast prescience of thing to comyn // but rather an vncerteyn opynyon/ /the whiche thing ¹to trowen of god I deme it felonye *and* vnleueful/ /ne I ne proeue nat
 4 thilke same reson as who seyth/ /I ne alowe nat or I ne preyse nat thilke same reson / by which þat som men weenen þat they mowen assoylen *and* vnknyttten the knotte of this question / for certes they seyn þat thing nis nat to comyn / for þat the puruyaunce of god
 8 hath seyn byforn þat is to comyn / but² rather the contrarye / *and* þat this/ /þat for þat the thing is to comyn therefore ne may it nat ben hidde fro the puruyaunce of god/ /*and* in this manere this necessite slydith ayein in to the contrarye partye//ne it ne by-houeth
 12 nat nedes þat thinges bytyden / þat ben puruyed/ /but it by-houeth nedes / þat thinges þat ben to comyn ben yporueyid/ /but as it weere ytrauayled / as who seyth þat thilke answeere procedith ryht as thogh men trauayleden / or weeren bysy to enqueren / the whiche thing is
 16 cause of the whiche thing / as weyther the prescience is cause of the necessite of thinges to comyn / or elles þat the necessite of thinges to comyn is cause of the puruyaunce³/ /but I ne enforce me nat now to shewen it⁴ / þat the bitydinge of thinges I wist byforn is necessarie//
 20 how so or in what manere/ /þat the ordre of causes hath it self/ /al thogh þat it ne seme nat / þat the prescience bringe in necessite of bytydinge to thinges to comyn/ /for certes yif þat any wyht sitteth / it bi-houyth by necessite þat the opinion be soth of hym þat coniect-
 24 eth þat he sitteth/ /*and* ayeinward also is it of the contrarye/ /yif the opynyon be soth of any wyht / for þat he sitteth/ /it by-houyth by necessite þat he sitte/ /thanne is heere necessite in þat oon *and* in þat oother / for in þat oon is necessite of sittyng / *and* certes in þat
 28 oother is necessite of sooth/ /but therefore ne sittith nat a wyht / for þat the opynyon of the sittyng is soth/ /but the opynyon is rather sooth for þat a wyht ⁵sitteth by-forn/ /*and* thus al thogh / þat the cause of the sooth com⁶th of þat *other* syde/ /as who seith þat al thogh
 32 þe cause of soth com⁶th of þe sittyng *and* nat of thee trewe opynyon / Algates yit is there comune necessite in þat on *and* in þat oother// thus shewith it þat I may make semblable skyles / of the puruy-

¹ leaf 158.² gloss: .s. aiunt.³ gloss: .s. prouidencie.⁴ gloss: illud.⁵ leaf 158, back.⁶—⁶ by corrector.

aunce of god / *and* of thinges to comyn / for al thowh þat for þat
 thinges ben comyn ther-fore ben they purueyid / nat certes for
 they ben purueyid ther-fore ne bytyde they nat / yit natheles by-
 houyth it by necessite / þat eyther the thinges to comyn ben 4
 ypurueyid of god / or elles þat the thinges þat ben purueyid of god
 bytyden¹ / *and* this thing only suffiseth ynowh to destroyen the
 freedom of owre arbitre / þat is to seyn of owre free wil/ /but now
 certes shewith it wel / how fer fro the sothe / *and* how vp so down² 8
 is this thing / þat we seyn þat the bytydyng of temporel thinges is
 cause of the eterne prescience/ /but for to wenyn / þat god puruyeth
 the thinges to comyn for they ben to comyn/ /what oother thing is
 it but for to weene / þat thilke thinges þat bytydden / whilom / ben 12
 causes of thilke souereyn puruyauunce / þat is in god/ /*and* her-to
 I adde yit this thing/ /þat ryht as whan þat I wot þat a thing is /
 it by-houyth by necessite þat thilke selue thing be / *and* ek whan I
 haue knowe þat any thing shal bytyden so by-houith it by necessite 16
 þat thilke same thing bytyde / so folweth it thanne / þat the bytyd-
 yng of the thing / .I. wist byforn ne may nat ben eschwed/ /*and*
 at the laste³ yif þat any wyht weene a thing to ben oother weyes
 thanne it is/ /it is nat oonly vnscience / but it is deceyuable opnyon/ 20
 ful diuerse *and* fer fro the soothe of science/ /wherfore yif any thing
 be so to comyn / so þat the bytydyng of hit ne be nat certeyn ne
 necessarye/ /who may wetyn byforn þat thilke thing is to comyn//
 for ryht as scyence ne may nat ben Medlyd / wit falsnesse / as who 24
 seyth / þat yif y wot a thing / it ne may nat be false þat⁴ I ne wot it /
 ryht so thilke thing⁴ þat is conseuyd by science / ne may nat ben
 non oother weys thanne as it is conceuyd/ /ffor þat is the cause whi
 þat science wantith lesing/ /as who seyth whi þat witynge ne reseuyth 28
 nat leesing of þat it wot/ /ffor it by-houyth by necessite þat euery
 thing be ryht as science comprehendith it to be/ /what shal I thanne
 seyn / In which manere knowith god byforn the thinges to comyn /
 yif they ne be nat certeyn / for yif þat he⁵ deme þat they⁶ ben to 32
 comyn / vneschwably⁷ / *and* so may be þat it is possyble / þat they

¹ gloss : .s. by necessite.

² gloss : ppostere.

³ gloss : .i. postremo. ⁴ leaf 159.

⁵ gloss : .s. deus.

⁶ gloss : .s. thynges.

⁷ gloss : .i. memorabiliter.

ne shollen nat comyn god is desseyuyd/ /but nat oonly to trowen
 þat god is desseyuyd / but for to speke it wit Mowth it is a
 felonos synne/ /but yif þat god wot þat ryht so as thinges ben
 4 to comyn so shullyn they comyn/ /so þat he wite egaly / as
 who seyth indifferently þat thinges mowen ben doon or elles nat
 ydoon/ /what is thilke prescience þat ne comprehendith no certeyn
 thing ne staable / Or elles what difference is ther bytwixe the pre-
 8 science / and thilke Iape worthi¹ dyuynenge of tyresye the dyuynor /
 þat seyde/ /al þat I seye *quod* he / eythir it shal be / or elles it ne
 shal nat be / or elles how mochel is worth the dyuyn prescience
 moore than the opynyon of man-kynde / yif so be þat it demyth the
 12 thinges vncerteyn as men doon/ /Of the whiche *domus* of men the
 bytydyng nis nat certeyn But yif so be þat non vncerteyn thing ne
 may ben in hym / þat is ryht certeyn welle of alle thinges / thanne is
 the bytydyng certeyn of thilke thinges / whiche he² hath wist byforn
 16 fermely³ to comyn/ /for which hit folweth that the freedom of the
 conseyles *and* of the werkes of man-kynd nis non / syn þat the thoght
 of god þat seth alle thinges with-owten errowr of falsnesse / byndeth
 and ⁴constreynyth hem to a bytydyng by necessite/ /and yif this
 20 thing be oonis ygraunted *and* resseyuyd / þat is to seyn þat ther
 nis no free wille/ /than she with it wel / how gret destruccyon⁵ /and /
⁶how grete damages ther folwen of thinges of mankynde/ /ffor in
 ydel ben ther thanne purposed *and* by-hyht Meedes to goode folk⁴ /
 24 *and* peynes to badde folk⁴ /syn þat no moeuynge of free corage
 voluntarye ne hath nat deseruyd hem / þat is to seyn neyther meede
 ne peyne / *and* it sholde seme thanne / þat thilke thing is alderworst /
 which þat is now demyd for aldermoost Iust *and* most ryhtful//
 28 þat is to seyn þat shrewes ben punysshed/ /or elles þat goode
 foolk⁴ ben ygerdonyd/ /the whiche foolk⁴ syn þat hir propre wil ne
 sent hem nat to þat oon / ne to þat oother / þat is to seyn / neyther
 to goode ne to harm// but constreynith hem certeyn necessite of
 32 thinges to comyn/ /thanne ne shollen ther neuere ben / ne neuere
 weeren vice ne vertu/ /but it sholde rathir ben confusion of alle
 dissertes / Medlyd with-owten discesion/ /and yit ther folweth

¹ *gloss*: .i. ridiculo.

² *gloss*: .s. deus.

³ *gloss*: .i. firmiter.

⁴ const corrected.

⁵ .i. occasus.

⁶ leaf 159, back.

a noother inconuenient of the whiche ther ne may ben thoght no
 moore felonos ne moore wykke / *and* þat is this / þat so as the orde
 of thinges is yled *and* comth of the puruyan^{ce} of god / ne that no thing
 nis leueful to the conseyles of mankynde / *as* who seyth þat men han 4
 no power to doon no thing / ne wilne no thing / *thanne* folweth it
 that owre vices ben referred to the makere of alle good / *as* who seyth
thanne folweth it / þat god owhte han the blame of owre vices / syn
 he constreynith vs by necessite to doon vices / *thanne* is ther no 8
 reson to hopen in god / ne for to preyen to god / *for* what sholde any
 wyht hopyn to god / or why sholden he preyen to god / syn þat the
 ordynaunce of destyne / which þat ne may nat ben inclyned / knytteth
and streynyth alle thinges þat men may desyren / *thanne* sholde ther 12
 be doon a-wey thilke oonly allyaunce / by-twixen god *and* men / þat is
 to seyn to hopen *and* ¹to preyen / *but* by the prys of Rihtwessenesse
and of verray mekenesse / *we* desseruyn the gerdon of the dyuyne
 grace / which þat is inestymable / þat is to seyn þat it is so gret / þat 16
 it ne may nat ben ful ypreysyd / *and* this is oonly the manere / þat is
 to seyn / hope *and* preyeres / for which it semyth þat men mowen
 speke with god / *and* by reson of supplicacion be conioynyd to thilke
 cleernesse / þat nis nat aproched no rather / or þat men be-sekyn it / 20
and impetrent it / *and* yif men weene nat þat hope ne preyeres / ne
 han strengthes / by the necessite of thinges to comyn / I-resseyuyd²
 what thing is ther *thanne* by whiche we mowen ben conioined / *and*
 clyuen to thilke souereyn prynce of thinges / for which it by- 24
 houyth by necessite / þat the lynage of mankynde / *as* þou³ songe / a
 lytel her by-forn⁴ / be departed *and* vnIoynyd from his welle / *and*
 faylen of his bygynnyng / *þat* is to seyn god

¶ The .3.^{de} Metur [*margin, leaf 160, back*]

WHat discordable cause / hath to-Rent *and* vniogynd⁵ the 28
 byndynge or⁶ the alliaunce of thinges / *þat* is to seyn
 the coniuncions of god *and* ⁶man⁷ which þat god hath
 establysshed so gret batayle by-twixen these two sooth-

¹ leaf 160. ² gloss: i. graunted. ³ gloss: .s. philosophic.

⁴ gloss: libro 4^o metro sexto.

⁵ gloss: .s. ne se compaciatur similiter.

⁶ leaf 161.

⁷ gloss: quod dicitur (or quasi dicat) nullus.

fast / or verray thinges/ /pat is to seyn bytwixen the puruauce of
god *and* free wil/ /pat they ben synguler *and* deuydyd¹ / ne pat they
ne wolen nat ben Meddelyd / ne cowpeled to-gydere/ /but per nis no
4 discord to the verray thinges² but they clyuen certeyn alwey to hem-
self/ /but pe thoht of man confowndid / and ouer-throwen by the
dirke Menbris of the body / ne may nat by fyr of his derkyd look-
ynge pat is to seyn by the vigour of his iushyhte whil the sowle is
8 in the body / knowe the thinne subtyl knyttynges of thingis/ /but
wherfore eschaufeth it³ so by so gret loue to fynden thilke notes of
soth Icouered / pat is to seyn wherfore eschaufeth the thoght of
man by so gret desyr to knowen thilke notificasyons pat ben Ihyd
12 vndyr the couertoures of sooth wot it³ awht thilke thing / pat it
a[n]gwyssos desireth to knowe / as who seyth nay/ /ffor no man
trauayleth for to witen thinges pat he wot / *and* therefore the texte
seyth thus/ /but who trauayleth to witen thinges yknowe / *and* yif
16 pat he ne knoweth hem nat / what sekyth thilke blynde thoght/
/what is he pat desireth any thing of which he not ryht nawht⁴/ /as
who seyth who so desireth any thing nedes somewhat he knoweth of
it / or elles he ne kowde nat desire it/ /Or who may folwen thinges
20 pat ne ben nat .I.-wist / *and* thogh pat he seke tho thinges wher
shal he fynde hem/ /what wyht pat is al vnkunnyng *and* ignoraunt
may knowe the forme pat is yfownde⁵ / but whan the sowle by-
holdeth *and* seth the heye thoght / pat is to seyn god / thanne
24 knoweth it to-gidere the somme / & the syngularites / pat is to seyn
the principulis / & euerych by hym self/ /but now whil the sowle
is hidde in the clowde & in the derkenesse of the menbris of the
bodi it ne hath nat al for-yetin it self / but it withholdeth the somme
28 of thinges / & leesith the ⁶syngularites/ /thanne who so pat sekith
sothnesse / he nis in neyther nother habite / for he not uat al / ne
he ne hath nat al foryetyn/ /but yit hym remembryth the somme of
thinges pat he with-holdeth/ /*and* axeth conseyl / *and* retreatith
32 deepliche thinges I-seyn by-forn / ⁸pat is to seyn the grete somme in

¹ gloss: *quod dicitur or (quasi dicat) non est ita.*

² gloss: *.s. prudencia & liberum arbitrium.* ^{3—3} gloss: *.s. anima.*

⁴ *quod dicitur non.*

⁵ *quod dicitur nullus.*

⁶ leaf 161, back.

⁷ gloss: *.i. retractat.*

⁸ *markt Glosa.*

his mynde ¹so þat he mowe adden the partyes þat he hath for-yetyn to
 thilke þat he hath with-holden

¶ The 4the prose [*Margin, leaf 164, back*]

THanne seyde she / this is quod she the Olde question of the
 puruyauce of god / *and* Marchus tullius whan he deuynede 4
 the dyuynaciouns / þat is to seyn in his book þat he wroot of
 diuinaciouns he moeuede gretly this question / *and* þou thy
 self hast I-sowht it mochel / *and* owtrely / *and* longe / but yit ne
 hath it nat ben determyned / ne Isped fermely *and* diligently / of any 8
 of yow / *and* the cause of this dirknesse *and* of this difculte / is
 for þat the moeuyng of the reson of mankynde / ne may nat
 moeuen to / þat is to seyn applien or Ioynen to the symplicite of
 the dyuyne prescience / the whiche symplicite of the deuyne pre- 12
 science / yif þat men myhten thinken it in any manere / þat is to
 seyn / þat yif men myhten thinken / *and* comprehendyn the thinges /
 as god seth hem / thanne / ne sholde ther dwellyn owtrely no
 dowte / the whiche resoun / *and* cause of difculte ².I. shal assaye as 16
 the laste to shewe / *and* to speden whan I haue fyrst yspendyd / *and*
 answered to the resouns by which þou art ymoeued / ffor I axe why
 þou weenest / þat thilke resouns of hem þat assoylen this question /
 ne be nat spedful ynowh ne sufficient / the whiche solucion / or 20
 the which reson / for þat it demyth þat the prescience nis nat cause
 of necessite to thingis to comyn / than ne weenith it nat þat freedom
 of wyl be destorbed or ylett by prescience / ffor ne drawestow nat
 argument; from elles where of the necessite of thinges to comyn / as 24
 who seyth any oother wey than thus / but þat thilke thinges þat the
 prescience wot byforn ne mowen nat vnbytyde / þat is to seyn þat
 they moten bytyde / but thanne yif þat prescience / ne putteth no
 necessite to thinges to comyn / as thow thyself hast confessid it / *and* 28
 by-knowen / a litel her byforn³ / what cause or what is it / as who seyth /
 ther may no cause be / by which þat the endes⁴ voluntarie of thinges /
 myhten be constreynyd to certeyn bytydynges⁵ / ffor by grace of
 possession / so þat þou mowe the betere vndirstonde this þat folweth / 32

¹ *markt textus.*

² leaf 165.

³ *gloss: prosa .3.^a*

⁴ *gloss: .i. exitus.*

⁵ *gloss: quod dicitur verbi gratia.*

/.I. pose¹ þat ther ne be no prescience/ /thanne axe I *quod* she in as
mochel as apartieneth to þat / sholden thanne thinges þat comyn of
free wyl / ben constreynyd to bytyden / by necessite / B nay *quod* I /
4 thanne ayeinward *quod* she/ /I suppose þat ther be prescience / but
þat is ne putteth no necessite to thinges / thanne trowe I þat thilke
selue freedom of wil shal dwellen al hool *and* absolut *and* vnbowonden
/ but þou wolt seyn þat al be it so / þat prescience nis nat cause
8 of the necessite of bytydyng to thinges to comyn/ /Al gates yit it is
a syngne / þat the thinges ben to bityden by necessite / by this
manere thanne al thogh the prescience ne hadde neuer I-ben / yit
al gate or at the leeste weye / it is certeyn thing that the endes² *and*
12 bytydinges of thinges to comyn sholden ben necessarye/ /ffor ³euery
signe shewith *and* signefieth oonly what the thing is⁴/ /but it ne
maketh⁵ nat the thing þat it signefieth / for which it by-houyth fyrst
to shewen þat no thing ne bytydeth / þat it ne bytydith by necessite /
16 or elles yif ther nere no necessite/ /certes thilke prescience ne myhte
nat be syngne of thing þat nis nat/ /but certes it is now certeyn
þat the proeue of this ysustenyd by stydefast reson / ne shal nat ben
lad ne proeued by sygnes / ne by argumentz .I.-taken fro *wit*-owte /
20 but by causes couenable *and* necessarye/ /but þou mayst seyn how
may it be þat the thinges ne bytyden nat þat ben ypurueyed to
comen/ /but certes ryht as we trowen / þat tho thinges which þat the
puruyaunce wot byforn to comyn / ne ben nat to bytyden/ /but þat
24 ne sholden we nat demen / but rather al thogh þat they shal bytyden /
yit ne haue they no necessite of hir kynde to be-tyden/ /*and* this
maystow lithly aperceyuen by this þat I shal seyn/ /ffor we sen many
thinges whan they ben doon by-forn owre eyen / ryht as men sen the
28 kartere worken in the tornynge *and* in atemprynge or adressynge of
hise kartes or charietes/ /*and* by this manere as who seyth / maystow
vndirstonde of alle oother workmen/ /is ther thanne any necessite as
who seyth in owre lookynge / þat constreynith or compellith any of
32 thinges to ben don so⁶/ /boece/ /nay *quod* I/ /ffor in ydel *and* in veyn
weere al the effect⁶ of craft / yif þat alle thinges weeren moeued by

¹ gloss : per impossibile.³ leaf 165, back.⁵ gloss : causat.² gloss : .i. exitus.⁴ gloss : .i. se eius significatum.⁶ quod dicitur non.

constreynynge/ /þat is to seyn by constreynynge of owre eyen or of
owre syhte/ /philosophie/ /the thinges thanne quod she / þat whan
men doon hem / ne han no necessite / þat men doon hem / /Ek tho
same thinges fyrst or they ben doon / they ben to comyn with- 4
owte necessite/ /ffor why ther ben somme thinges¹ to bytyden of
which the endes / and the bytydynges of hem / ben absolut / and
qwit / of alle necessite/ /ffor certes I ne trowe nat þat any man
wolde seyn this / þat tho thinges þat men doon now / þat they ne 8
weeren to bytyden fyrst or they weeren I-doon/ /and thilke same
thinges / al thogh / þat men hadden I-wist hem byforn / yit they
han free bytydynges/ /for ryht as science of thinges present/ ne
bryngeth in no necessite to thinges þat men doon/ /ryht so the 12
prescience of thinges to comen ne bryngeth in no necessite to thinges
to be-tyden/ /but þou mayst seyn / þat of thilke same it is I-dowted /
as wheither þat of thilke thinges / þat ne han non issues² / and
bitidynges necessaries / yif ther-of may ben any prescience / ffor 16
certes they semyn to discorden / ffor þou weenist þat yif þat thinges
ben I-seyn byforn / þat necessite folwith hem/ /and yif necessite
fayleth hem / they ne myhten nat ben wyst byforn/ /and yif nothing³
ne may ben comprehendid by science but certeyn/ /and yif tho 20
thinges þat ne han no certeyn by-tydinges⁴ / ben purueyid as certeyn//
³it sholde ben dirknesse of opynion / nat soothfastnesse of science//
and þou weenyst þat it be diuerse fro the hoolnesse of science / þat
any man sholde deme a thing to ben oother weys thanne it is it self / 24
and the cause of this Erroure is / þat of alle the thinges þat euery
wyht hath yknowe / they weenen þat tho thinges ben Iknowe al
oonly / by the strengthe and by the nature of the thinges / þat ben
I-wist or yknowe/ /and it is al the contrarye/ /ffor al þat euere is 28
yknowe / it is rather comprehendyd / and knowen nat after his
strengthe / and his nature / but after the faculte þat is to seyn the
power and the nature of hem þat knowen / and for this shal mowen
shewen by a short ensauple the same Rowndnesse of a body/ 32
/Oother weys the sihte of the eye knowith it / and oother weyes þe
towchinge⁵// the lookynge bi castynge of his beemes waiteth and

¹ leaf 166.

² gloss: .i. exitus.

³ gloss: putas.

⁴ gloss: exitus.

⁵ leaf 166, back.

seth from after al the body to-gidere / *with-owte* moeuynge of it self//
but the towchyng clyueth *and conioigneth* to the Rownde body/¹
and moeueth abowte the enuyronynge / *and* comprehendith by partyes
4 the Rowndnesse/ /*and* the man him self / oother weys / wit by-
holdeth hym / *and* oother weys ymagynacion / *and* oother weys
reson / *and* othir² weys Intelligense/ //for the wit *comprehendith with-*
*owte*forth the figure of the body of the man / *pat* is establyssed in
8 the matere subiect / but the ymaginacion *comprehendith*² only the
figure *with-owte* the matere / Reson surmondeth ymaginacion / *and*
comprehendith by vniuersal lookynge / the comune spece³ / *pat* is in
the singuler peces / but the eye of intelligence is heyerer / for it sur-
12 mounteth the enuyronynge of the vniuersite / *and* loketh ouer that /
bi pure subtilite of thoght/ thilke same symple forme of man / *pat* is
perdurably / in the dyuyn thought/ /In which this owhte gretly to
ben considered / *pat* the heyiste strenght to *comprehendyn* thinges / en-
16 braseth *and* contieneth the lowerer strengthe / but the lowerer strengthe
ne arysith nat in no manere to heyerer strengthe/ /withe ne may no thing
comprehende owt of matere / ne the ymagynacion ne lookyth nat the
vniuersels speces / ne reson taketh nat the symple forme so as Intelli-
20 gence takith/ /but Intellygence looketh al a-bouen whan it hath *com-*
prehendith the forme / it knoweth *and* demyth alle the thinges *pat*
ben vndyr⁴ *pat* forme/ /But she⁴ knoweth hem in thilke manere / in the
which it *comprehendith* thilke same symple forme *pat* ne may neuer
24 ben known to none of *pat* oother/ /*pat* is to seyn to none of the thre
forseyde thinges of the sowle / for it knoweth the vniuersite of reson
And the figure of the ymagynacion / *and* the sensible material con-
seyuyd bi wit/ /ne it ne vseth nat nor of reson/ /ne of ymagynacion /
28 ne of ⁵wit *with-owte*forth/ /but it bi-holdeth alle thingis so as I
shal seye bi a strok of thoght formely / *with-owte* discours or colla-
tion/ /Certes reson whan it looketh any thing vniuersel / it ne vseth
nat of ymagynacion / nor of witte / *and* algates yit it *comprehendeth*
32 the thinges ymaginable *and* sensible / for reson is she / *pat* diffynissh
et the vniuersel of hir conseyte ryht thus / Man is a reasonable two
foted beest/ /*and* how so *pat* this knowynge is vniuersel / yit nis

¹ gloss: orbis.

² gloss: vel iudicat.

³ gloss: .i. speciem.

⁴ gloss: s intelligence.

⁵ leaf 167.

ther no wyht / þat ne woot wel / þat a man is a thing^r ymaginable
and sensible / *and* this same considereth wel reson / but þat nis nat
 by ymagynacion nor by wit / but it looketh it by a resonable con-
 cepcion / Also ymaginacion / al be it so þat it taketh of wit the ⁴
 bygynnynge to seen & to formen the figures / algates al thogh þat
 wit ne weere nat present / yit it enuyrowneth & comprehendeth
 alle thinges sensible / nat by reson sensible of deemynge / but bi
 reson Imaginatyf / Sestow nat thanne þat alle the thinges in know- 8
 ynge / vsen moore of hir faculte / or of hir power / thanne they
 doon of the faculte or power of thinges þat ben Iknowe / Ne þat nis
 nat wrong / for so as euery Iugement is the dede or doynge of hym
 þat demeth / it by-houyith þat euery wyht performe the werk / *and* 12
 his entencion / nat of foreyne power / but of his propre power

¶ The .4.the Metur [*margin, leaf 168*]

The porche / þat is to seyn / A gate of the town of athenis /
 ther as philosophres hadden hyr congregasion to desputen //
 thilke porche browhte som tyme oolde men ful dirke in hir 16
 sentenses / þat is to seyn philosophres þat hyhten stoyciens /
 þat wenden þat ymagis *and* sensibilittees / þat is to seyn sensible
 ymaginacions / Or ellis ymagynacions of sensible thinges / weeren
 enpreynted in to sowles / fro bodies *with-owte* forth / as who seyth / 20
 þat thilke stoyciens wenden þat the sowle hadde ben naked of it
 self / as a Myroure or a cleene parchemyn / so þat alle fygyres mosten
 fyrst comyn fro thinges fro *with-owte* / in to sowles / *and* ben aprent-
 yd in to sowles / *texte* / Ryht as we ben wont somtyme by a swyfte 24
 poyntel / to ficchen *lettres* emprientyd in the smothernesse or in the
 pleyntnesse of the table of wax / or in parchemyn þat ne hath no
 figure ne note in it / *glose* / but now arguith boece ayenis the
 opynyon *and* seyth thus / but yif the thryuynge sowle ne vnpleyteth 28
 no thing / þat is to seyn ne dooth no thing by his propre moeuyngis
 but suffreth *and* lith to tho figures *and* to tho notes of bodies *with-*
owte forth / & yildeth ymages ydel *and* veyn in the Manere of a
 Myroure / whennes² thryueth thanne / or whennes comth thilke know- 32

¹ leaf 168, back.

² *gloss: quoniam.*

yngre in owre sowle / þat decernith *and* byholdeth alle thinges/ *and*
whennes is thilke strengthe þat biholdeth the synguler thinges/ *or*
whennes is the strengthe þat deuydeth thinges / .I-knowe / *and* thilke
4 strengthe þat gaderith to-gidere the thinges deuyded/ *and* the
strengthe þat chesith his entrechawngyd wey/ //for som tyme it
heuith vp the heuyd / þat is to seyn / þat it heuith vp the entencion
to Ryht heye thinges¹/ *and* som tyme it dessendith in to ryht lowe
8 thinges²/ *and* whan it retorneth in to hym self it reproeueth *and*
distroyet the false thinges by the trewe thinges/ /Certes this strengthe³
is cause moore efficient / *and* mochel moore myhty to sen *and* to
knowe thinges/ /thanne thilke cause þat suffreth *and* resseyuyth the
12 notes *and* the figures Inpressed in manere of matere/ /Algates the
passion/ þat is to seyn the suffraunce or the wit in the qwyke body /
goth byforn exitinge *and* moeuynge the strengthis of the thoght//
ryht so as whan þat cleernesse smyteth the eyen *and* moeueth hem
16 to sen / *or* ryht so as voys-or sown hurtelith to the Eeres *and* com-
moeueth hem to herkne / than is the strengthe of the thoght I-moeued
and excited *and* clepith forth to semblable moeuynge the speces
þat it halt with-inne it self/ *and* addeth tho speces to the notes *and*
20 to the thinges with-owte forth / *and* medlith the ymages of thinges
with-owte forth to tho formes I-hidde with-inne hym self

¶ The .5.the prose [margin, leaf 170]

24 **B**Vt what yif þat in bodies to ben feelid / þat is to seyn in
the takynge of knowlechinge of bodyly thinges ⁴And al be
it so þat the qualites of bodies þat ben obieete fro with-owte-
forth / moeuen *and* entalenten the Instrumentz of the wittes//
and al be it so þat the passion of the bodi þat is to seyn the witte
or the suffraunce / goth to-forn the strengthe of the workynge corage /
28 the which passion or suffraunce clepith forth the dede of the thoght
in hym self / *and* moeueth *and* exiteth in this mene while the formes
þat restin with-inne forth/ *and* yif þat insensibele bodies as I haue
seyd / owre corage nis nat I-tawht / *or* emprienpted / by passion⁵ to
32 knowe thise thinges/ /but demyth *and* knoweth of his owne strengthe

¹ gloss: .i. principijs.

² gloss: .s. conclusiones.

³ gloss: .s. anima.

⁴ leaf 170, back.

⁵ gloss: non ex natura rei.

the passion) or suffraunce subiect to the body Moche moore thanne
 tho thinges þat ben absolut *and* quite fro alle talentz or affeccions of
 bodies / as god or hise Aungelis / ne folwin nat in discernynge thinges
 obiect fro *with*-owteforth/ /but they acomplyssen *and* spedin the 4
 dede of hir thoht / by this reson) thanne ther comyn many maner
 knowynges to diuerse *and* differynge substancces/ /ffor the wit of the
 body / the whiche wit is naked *and* despoyled of alle oother know-
 ynges / thilke wit comth to beestis / þat ne mowe nat moeuen hem 8
 self / her *and* ther as oystrys *and* musculis *and* other swiche shelle
 fyssh of the see / þat clyuen / and ben norysshed to Rochis¹/ /but
 the ymaginacion) comth to Remuable beestis þat semyn to han
 talent to fleen or to desiren any thing / but reson) is al oonly to the 12
 lynage of mankynde / ryht as intelligence is oonly the deuyne nature /
 of which it folweth / þat thilke knowynge is moore worth thanne
 thise oothre / syn it knoweth by his *propre* nature / nat oonly his
 subiect / as who seyth it ne knoweth nat al oonly / þat apertieneth 16
 properly to his knowynge/ /but it knoweth the subiectz of alle oother
 knowynges/ /but² how shal it thanne be / yif þat wit *and* ymagina-
 cion) stryuen ayein resonyng) / *and* seyn that ³of thilke vniuersels
 thinges þat Reson) weenith to sen þat it nis ryht nawht/ /for wit *and* 20
 ymaginacion) seyn / þat that / þat is sensible / or ymaginable / it ne
 may nat be vniuersel / thanne is eyther the Iugement of reson) soth
 ne þat ther nis no thing sensible⁴ / or elles for þat reson) wot wel þat
 many thinges ben subiect to wit / *and* to ymaginacion)/ /thane is 24
 the concepcion) of reson) veyn *and* false which þat looketh *and* com-
 prehendith þat þat is sensible *and* synguler as vniuersel/ /*and* yif þat
 Reson) wolde answeren ayein to thise two / þat is to seyn to witte *and*
 to ymaginacion) / *and* seyn þat soothly she hir self / þat is to seyn 28
 reson) / lokith *and* comprehendith by reson) of vniuersalite / bothe þat
 that is sensible / *and* þat that is ymaginable / And þat thilke two þat
 is to seyn wit *and* yma[gina]cion) ne mowen nat stretchen ne en-
 hansen hem self to knowy of vniuersalite / for þat the knowynge of 32
 hem / ne may exceden ne surmonite the bodyly figures/ /Certes of the

¹ gloss: .i. saccis.

² gloss: quoniam.

³ leaf 171.

⁴ gloss: quod absurdum est.

knowinge of thinges / men owhten rather yeuen credence to the moore
 stidfast / *and* to the moore parfyt Iugement/ /In this manere
 stryuyngē thanne we þat han strengthe of resonyngē / *and* of
 4 ymaginyngē *and* of wit / þat is to seyn / bi reson / *and* by ymagin-
 acion *and* bi wit / *and* we sholde rathir preyse the cause of reson /
 as who seyth than the cause of wit *and* of ymaginacion/ /Semblable
 thing is it þat the Resoun of mankynde / ne weeneth nat / þat the
 8 deuyne intelligence bi-holdith or knoweth thinges to comyn/ /but ryht
 as the Reson of mankynde knoweth hem/ /ffor þou arguiste¹ / *and* seyst
 thus / þat yif it seme nat to men / þat some thinges han certeyn / *and*
 necessarye bytydinges / they ne mowen nat ben wyst byforn certeynly
 12 to bi-tyden/ /*and* thanne nist her no prescience of thilke thinges /
 and yif we trowe þat prescience be in these thinges / thanne is ther
 no thing / þat it ne bideth bi necessite/ /but² Certes yif we myhten
 han the Iugement of the dyuyne thoght / as we ben parsoneres³ of
 16 Reson / ryht so as we han demyd / þat it bi-houith þat Imaginacion
and wit be by-nethe reson / ryht so wolde we demen þat it weere
 ryhtful thing / þat mannes Reson owte to submitten it self / *and* to
 ben by-nethe the dyuyne thoght/ /ffor which yif þat we mowen as
 20 who seyth þat yif þat we mowen / I conseyle þat we enhance vs in
 to þe heihte of thilke souereyn Intelligence/ /ffor ther shal Reson wel
 seen þat / þat it ne may nat bi-holden in it self / *and* certes þat is
 this / in what manere the prescience of god seth alle thingis certains
 24 *and* diffinysshed / al though they ne han no certeyn Issues or bitid-
 inges/ /ne this nis non opinion / but it is rather the symplicite of þe
 souereyn science / þat nis nat enclosed / nor I-shet / *within* none
 bowndes

¶ The .5.the Metur [*margin, leaf 172*]

28 **T**he beestis passen bi the Erthes bi ful diuerse figuris for
 som of hem han hir bodies strawght & crepin in the /dust /
and drawn after hem a traas or a forwh / I-kountynued /
 þat is to seyn / as nadris or snakis/ /*and* oother beestis by
 32 the wandryngē lyhtnesse of hir wyngis betyn the wyndes / *and* ouer-
 swymmyn the spaces of the longe eyr by moyst fleeyngē/ /*and* oother

¹ gloss : disseris.

² leaf 171, back.

³ soneres corrected.

bestis gladen hem self to diggen hir traas or hir steppis in the Erthe
with hir goyng; or with hir feet/ *and* ¹to gon eyther bi the greene
feeldes / or elles to walken vnder the woodes/ *and* al be it so þat þou
seest þat they alle discordyn bi diuerse formes / algates hir faces 4
enclynyd heuyeth hir dulle wittes/ /Only the lynage of man heuyth
heyste his heye heuyd / *and* stonidith lyht with his vp-Ryht body /
& by-hooldith the erthes vnder hym/ *and* but yif þou erthely man
wexest yuel owt of thi wit / this figure amonestith the þat axest the 8
heuene with thy ryhte visage / *and* hast areysyd thy fore-heuyd to
beryn vp a heygh thy corage / so þat thy thoght / ne be nat I-heuyed /
ne put lowe vnder foote / syn þat thy body is so heye areysed

¶ The 6^{te} prose *and* the laste [margin, leaf 177]

THerfore thanne as I haue shewyd a litel her byforn / þat alle 12
thinges þat is I-wyst / nis nat knowen / by his nature propre /
but bi the nature of hem þat comprehenden it / lat vs loke
now in as mochel as it is leueful² to vs/ /as who seyth / lat
vs loke now as we mowen / which þat the estat is of the deuyne 16
substance / so þat we mowen ek knowen what his³ science is / the
commune Iugement of alle creaturis resonablis / thanne is this / þat
god is eterne / Lat vs considere thanne what is eternite ffor certes þat
shal shewen vs to-gidere the deuyne nature / *and* the deuyne science / 20
Eternite thanne is parfyt possession) / *and* al-to gidere of lyf Inter-
mynable/ *and* þat shewith moore cleerly / bi the comparison) or
collacion) of temporel thinges/ /ffor alle thing þat lyueth in tyme it
is present / *and* procedith fro preterit; in to futuris / þat is to seyn 24
fro tyme passed in to tyme comynge / ne ther nys nothing estab-
lysshed in tyme / þat may enbracen to-gidere al the space of his lyf//
ffor certes yit ne hath it nat takyn the tyme of to morwe / *and* it
hath lost the tyme of yisterday / *and* certes in the lyf of this day / ye ne 28
lyuen no moore but ryht as in the moeuable *and* transitorye moment//
thanne thilke thing þat suffreth temporel condicion) / al thogh þat
it neuere bygan to be / ne thogh it neuere cese for to be / as Aristotile
demyd of the ⁴world / *and* al thogh þat the lyf of it be stretched 32

¹ gloss: gaudent.

² gloss: .i. fas.

³ gloss: dei.

⁴ leaf 177, back.

with infinite of tyme / yit algates nis it no swych thing / þat men
 myhten trowen by ryht þat it is eterne/ /ffor al thogh þat it *compre-*
hende and embrace the space of lyf Infynit / yit algates ne embrasith
 4 *it nat the space of the lyf al to-gidere/ /ffor it ne hat nat the futuris*
þat ne ben nat yit / ne it ne hath no lengere the preterit; þat ben
I-doon / or I-passed but thilke thing thanne þat hath and compre-
hendith to-gidere al the plente of the lyf Intermynable / to whom
 8 *ther ne fayleth nawht of the future / and to whom ther nis nawht of*
þ^e preterite escapyd nor I-passed / thilke same is I-witnesshed / and
I-proeued by ryht to ben Eterne/ /and it by-houyth by necessite /
þat thilke þing^e be al wey present to hym self / and compotent / as
 12 *who seyt al wey present to hym self / and so myhty þat al be ryht at*
his pleasaunce / and þat he haue al present the Infynyte of the
moeuable tyme/ /Wher-fore som men trowen wrongfulli þat when
they heeren / þat it semede / to plato / þat this world / ne hadde
 16 *neuere bygynnyng of tyme/ /ne þat it neuere shal han faylyng//*
they weenen in this manere þat this world be maked coeterne with his
makere / as who seyth / they weene þat this world and god ben maked
to-gidere eterne / and þat is a wrongful weenyng//ffor oother thing is it
 20 *to ben I-lad by lyf intermynable / as plato graunted to the world and*
oother thing is it to enbrace to-gydere al the present of the lyf intermyn-
able / the whiche thing it is cleer and manyfest / þat it is propre to the
deuyne thoght/ /ne it ne sholde nat semen to vs / þat god is Eldere
 24 *þanne thinges þat ben I-maked by quantyte of tyme/ /but rather by*
the proprete of his symple nature/ /ffor this ilke infynyt moeuyng of
temporel thinges / folweth this presentarye ¹estat of lyf vnmoeuable /
and so as it ne may nat countrefeten it / ne feynen it / ne be euene
 28 *lyk to it/ /ffor the inmoeuablete / þat is to seyn þat is in the eternite*
of god / it faileth and falleth in to moeuyng / fro the simplicite of
the presence of god / and disencresith in to the Infynit quantite of
future and of preterite/ /and so as it ne may nat han to-gidere al the
 32 *plente of the lyf/ /Algates yit / for as moche as it ne cesith neuere*
for to ben / in som manere / it semith som del to vs / þat it folweth
and resemblith thilke thing þat it ne may nat atayne to ne fullfyllen//
and byndith it² self to som manere presensse of this litel and swyfte

¹ leaf 178.² gloss: .s. *mocio temporalis*.

Moment¹ / /the which presence/ of this lytele *and* swyfte moment / for
 þat it berith. a manere ymage / or lyknesse / of the ay dwellynge
 presence of god / it graunteth to swyche manere thinges as it bitydith
 to þat it semith hem / as thise thinges han yben / *and* ben/ *and* for 4
 þat the presence of swych lytel moment ne may nat dwelle/ /ther-for
 it rauysshed *and* took the Infynyte wey of tyme / þat is to seyn bi
 succession/ /*and* bi this manere is it I-doon / for þat it sholde con-
 tynue the lyf in gooinge / of the whiche lyf / it ne myhte nat embrace 8
 the plente in dwellynge/ *and* for-thy yif we wollen putten worthi
 names to thinges *and* folwen plato / lat vs seye thanne sothly / þat
 god is eterne / *and* þat the world is perpetuel/ /thanne syn þat euery
 Iugement knowith *and* comprehendith bi his owne nature thinges þat 12
 ben subiect / vn to hym/ /ther is sothly to god / al weys / an Eterne
and presentarie estat / *and* the science of him² þat ouer-passeth al
 temporel moeuement³ dwellith in the symplycite of his presence *and*
 embraceth *and* considerith alle the Infynyt spaces of tymes preterit³ 16
and futures/ *and* looketh in his symple knowynge alle thinges of
 preterit ryht as they weeren I-doon ⁴presently riht now/ /yif þou wolt
 thanne thinken / *and* auyse the prescience / bi which it knoweth alle
 thinges / þou ne shalt nat demyn it as prescience of thinges to comyn / 20
 but þou shal demyn it moore ryhtfully / þat it is science of presence /
 or of Instance / þat neuer ne fayleth/ /ffor which it nis nat yclepyd
⁵puruydence / but it sholde rather ben clepyd puruyauunce/ þat is
 establysshed ful fer fro ryht lowe thinges / *and* byhooldeth from a- 24
 fer alle thinges ryht as it weere fro the heye heyhte of thinges/ /why
 axestow thanne / or why desputestow thanne / þat thilke thinges ben
 doon bi necessite / whiche þat ben yseyn *and* knowen bi the deuyne
 syhte / syn þat forsothe men ne maken nat thilke thinges necessarye 28
 which þat they sen ben I-doon in hir syhte/ /ffor ⁶addith thi bi-hoold-
 inge any necessite to thilke thinges þat þou bi-hooldest presente/ /Nay
quod I/ /philosophie/ /Certes thanne yif men myhte maken any digne
 comparison) or collacion) of þ^e presence diuine / *and* of þ^e presence of 32
 mankynde / ryht so as ye sen some thinges in this temporel present /
 ryht so seth god alle thinges bi his eterne present, /wherfore this

¹ gloss : instantis.

² gloss : .s. dei.

³ gloss : mocio.

⁴ leaf 178, back.

⁵ gloss : prouidencia.

⁶ gloss : quoniam.

deuyne prescience / ne chaungeth nat the nature ne the proprete of
 thinges/ /but bi-hooldeth swyche thinges present to hym ward / as
 they shullen bityde to yow ward in tyme to comyn/ /ne it ne con-
 4 fowndeth nat the Iugement of thinges/ /but bi O syhte of his thowht /
 he knoweth the thinges to comyn / as wel necessarye as nat neces-
 sarye/ /Ryht so as whan ye seen to-gidere a man walke on the erthe /
and the sonne arysen in the heuene/ /al be it so þat ye sen *and* bi-
 8 holden / þat oon *and* þat oother to-gidere / yit natheles ye demyn *and*
 discernen / þat that oon is voluntarye *and* þat oother necessarie /
 Ryht so thanne the deuynge lookynge by-holdynge alle ¹thinges
 vndyr hym / ne trowblith nat the qualite of thinges / þat ben cer-
 12 teynly present to hym ward / But as to the *condicion* of tyme / for-
 sothe they ben future/ /ffor which it folweth / þat this nis non
 opinion) but rather a stidefast knowynge I-strengthened by sothnesse /
 þat whanne þat god knoweth any thing to be / he ne vnwot nat that
 16 thilke thing wantith necessite to be/ /this is to seyn þat whan þat
 god knoweth any thing to bi-tyde he wot wel þat it ne hath no
 necessite to bityde/ /*and* yif þou seyst heere þat thilke thing þat god
 seth to bityde/ /it ne may nat vnbitide/ /as who seyth it mot bide//
 20 *and* thilke thing þat ne may nat vnbitide it mot bityde bi necessite /
and þat þou streyne² me bi this name of necessite/ /Certes I wol wel
 confessen *and* by-knowe a thing of ful sad trowthe / but vnnethe
 shal ther any wyht mowe sen it / or come ther-to / but yif þat he be
 24 by-holdere of þe deuyne thoght/ /ffor I wol answeren the thus / þat
 thilke thing þat is future / whan it is referred to the deuyne know-
 ynge / thanne is it necessarye/ /but certis whan it is vndirstondyn in
 his owne kynde / men sen it is owtrely free / *and* absolut fro alle
 28 necessite/ /for certes ther ben two maneres of necessite / þat oon
 necessite is symple / as thus þat it bihouith bi necessite / þat alle
 men be mortal or dedly/ /A noother necessite is *condicional* / as thus
 yif þou wost þat a man walketh / it bi-houith bi necessite þat he
 32 walke/ /thilke thing thanne þat any wyht hath I-knowe to be / it ne
 may ben non oother weyes thanne he knoweth it to be/ /but this
condicion ne draweth nat *with* hir thilke necessite symple/ /ffor

¹ leaf 179.

² *gloss* : astringas.

certes this necessite condicionel / the propre nature of it ne maketh
it nat but the adieccion of the condicion maketh it / ffor no necessite
ne constreynyth a man ¹to gon / þat goth bi his propre wil / al be it
so þat whan he goth þat it is necessarie þat he goth / Ryht on this 4
same manere thanne yif þat the puruyaunce of god seth any thing
present / than mot thilke thinge ben bi necessite / al thogh þat it ne
haue no necessite of his owne nature / /but certes the futuris þat
bityden bi freedom of Arbitre / god seth hem alle to-gidere present // 8
thise thinges thanne yif they ben referred to the deuyne syhte /
thanne ben they makend necessarye bi the condicion of the deuyne
knowynge / /but certes yif thilke thinges be consideryd bi hem self
they ben absolut of necessite / and ne forletyn nat ne cesen nat of the 12
liberte of hir owne nature / /thanne certes with-owte dowte / alle the
thinges shollen be doon which þat god wot biforn þat they ben to
comyn / /but som of hem comyn and bityden² of free arbitre or of free
wiH / þat al be it so / þat they by tyden / yit algates ne leese they 16
nat hir propre nature in beeynge / /bi the which fyrst or þat they
weeryn I-doon / they hadden power nat to han bityd / /Boece / /what is
this to seyn thanne *quod* I / /þat thinges ne ben nat necessarye bi hir
propre nature / /so as they comyn in alle maneres in the lyknesse of 20
necessite / bi the condicion of the deuyne science / *philosophie* / this
is the difference *quod* she / þat tho thinges þat I purposede the a
lytel her byforn / þat is to seyn the sonne arysynge / and the man
walkynge / þat ther whiles þat thilke thinges ben I-doon / they ne 24
myhte nat ben vndoon natheles þat oon of hem or it was I-doon / it
houyd by necessite þat it was I-doon / but nat that oother / /Ryht so
is hit heere þat the thinges þat god hath present / with-owte dowte
they shollen ben / but som of hem descendith of the nature of thinges 28
as the sonne arysynge / and som descendith of the powere of the
doeres as the man walkynge / thanne seyde I no wrong / þat yif þat
thise thinges ben referryd to the deuyne knowynge ³thanne ben they
necessarye / and yif they ben considerid by hem self thanne ben th[e]y 32
absolut fro the bond of necessite / riht so as alle thinges þat apierith
or shewith to þe wittes / yif þou referre it to reson / it is vniuersel / and

¹ leaf 179, back.² gloss: *profisciscuntur*.³ leaf 180.

yif þou referre it or loke it to it self / than is it singuler / but now
yif þou seyst thus / þat yif it be in my power to chaunge my purpos /
than shal I voyde the puruyance of god / whan þat perauenture
4 I shal han chaunged the thinges þat he knoweth byforn / /thanne shal
I answere the thus / /Certes þou mayst wel chaungen thy purpos / but
for as mochel as the present sothnesse of the deuyne puruyance / bi-
holdeth þat þou mayst chaunge thy purpos / and wheyther þou wolt
8 chaunge it or no / and whyderward þat þou torne it þou ne mayst nat
eschuen the deuyne prescience / ryht as þou ne mayst nat fleen the syhte
of the presente eye / al thowh þat thow torne thy self bi thi free wyl /
in to diuerse accions / but þou mayst seyn ayein / how shal it thanne
12 be / shal nat the deuyne science be chaungyd bi my disposicion /
whan þat I wole O thing now / and now a noother / and thilke
prescience ne semyth it nat to entrechaunge stowndes ¹of knowynge /
as who seyth ne shal it nat seme to vs / þat the deuyne prescience
16 entrechaungeth hise diuerse stowndes of knowynge / so þat it knowe
sum tyme O thing and som tyme the contrarie / /No forsothe quod I /
ffor the deuyne syhte² renneth to-forn and seth alle futures / and
clepith hem ayein / and retorneth³ hem to the presence of his propre
20 knowinge / ne he ne entrechaungeth nat so as þou weenest the
stoundes¹ of for-knowynge / as now this /now þat / but he⁴ ay dwell-
ynge comth by-forn / and embraseth at o strook alle thy mutacions /
and this presence to comprehenden / and to sen alle thinges god /
24 ne hath nat taken it of the bitydinge of thinges to come / but of his
propre symplicite / and her⁵ bi is assoyled thilke thing þat þou puttest
alitel her byforn / /þat is to seyn / þat it is vnworthy thyng to seyn /
⁵þat owre futures yeuyn cause of the science of god / /ffor certes this
28 strengthe of the deuyne science / which þat embraceth alle thinges bi
his presentarye knowinge / establysseth manere to alle thinges / and it
ne oweth nawht to lattere⁶ thinges / and syn þat these thinges ben thus /
than is ther freedom of arbitre / þat dwelleth hool and vn-wemmyd
32 to Mortal men / ne the lawes ne purposen nat wykkedly Medes and
peynes to þe wyllynges of men / þat ben vnbownden and quite of all
necessite / and god byholdere and for-witere of alle thinges dwelleth

¹ gloss: vices.² gloss: intuitus.³ gloss: retorques.⁴ gloss: .s. deus.⁵ leaf 180, back.⁶ gloss: posterioribus.

a-boue / and the present eternite of his sihte renneth alwey with the
diuerse qualite of owre dedes / despensynge and ordeynynge Meedes
to goode men / and torment to wykkedmen/ /ne in ydel ne in veyn
ne ben ther nat put in god / hope and preyeris / þat ne mowen ne 4
ben vnspedful ne with-owte effect whan they ben ryhtful/ /withston
thanne and eschue þou vices/ / worshiþe and loue þou vertuus / areys
thy corage to ryhtful hopes / yilde þou humble preyeris a heygh/
Gret necessite of prowesse and vertu is encharged and commaunded 8
to yow yif ye nyl nat' dissimulen/ /syn þat ye workyn and doon þat
is to seyn / yowre dedes / or yowre workes by-form the eyen of þe Iuge
þat seth and demyth alle thinges/ /To whom be goye & worshiþe bi
Infynyt tymes / A. M. E. N.

Explicit expliceat ludere scriptor eat
ffinito libro sit laus et gloria Christo
Corpore scribentis sit gratia cunctipotentis

GLOSSARIAL AND GENERAL INDEX.

BY W. M. WOOD.

- Abayssen, 113/26, to be abashed, dismayed.
 Abaysshed, 3/20, abashed.
 Abayst, 84/14, abashed.
 Abieth, 85/26, suffers.
 Ablinge, Ablynge, 16/32, 69/1, enabling.
 Abood, 50/3, abode.
 Aboven, 2/21, above.
 Abreggyng, 117/11, curtailng.
 Abyde, 3/21, to wait.
 Abydyng, 25/32, expecting.
 Abyen, 97/27, suffer.
 Abyest, 27/11, sufferest, endurest.
 Achademicis, 3/12, Grecian schools, or academies.
 Achat, 9/8, purchase.
 Achelows, 115/7, Achelous.
 Achemenie, 117/24, Achemenia.
 Acheved, 11/15, achieved, accomplished.
 Achoken, 32/29, choke.
 Acomplyse, 72/19, accomplish.
 Acomplyssed, 105/33, accomplished.
 Acordable, 49/9, agreeing.
 Acordaunce, 111/23, agreement.
 Acordaunt, 12/2, agreeing, unanimous.
 Acorde, 67/30, accord.
 Acordy, 110/8, agree.
 Acordyn, 53/17, live in accord.
 Acountedest, 33/7, accounted.
 Accountyng, 4/4, calculation.
 Acoyede, 26/2, soothed, quieted.
 Active life, the, 2/21.
 Actorros, 45/23, authors.
 Acusor, 57/5, informer.
- Adden, 65/16, add.
 Adieccion, 137/1, addition.
 Adrad, 30/8, in fear, afraid.
 Adressyng, 126/28, directing, controlling.
 A fer, 54/20, afar.
 Affryke, 42/2, Africa.
 Agamenon, 114/12, Agamemnon.
 Agast, 30/9, 59/21, 60/3, 84/1, aghast, afraid, frightened.
 Agasten, 84/16, to frighten.
 Agastyth, 109/22, terrifies, frightens.
 Agoon, 54/33, ago.
 Agreeable, 32/33, 62/22, pleasant, sweet.
 Agrysen, 5/28, to be afraid, dread.
 Agryseth, 16/27, dreadeth.
 Agrysyst, 21/2, dreadest.
 A heygh, 133/10, on high.
 Ajudged, 9/20, adjudged.
 Akkornes, 95/26, acorns.
 Aknowe, 10/20, 96/10, acknowledged.
 Albyn, 9/21, 11/30, a Consul at Rome.
 Alcidiades, 63/24, Alcibiades.
 Alder fayrest, 68/17, fairest of all.
 Alderfirst, 5/29, first of all.
 Aldermost, Aldermost, 97/10, 122/27, most of all.
 Alderworst, 122/26, worst of all.
 Algates, Allegates, 12/9, 53/17, 63/29, yet, nevertheless.
 Allegged, 96/20, alleviated.
 Allone, 74/9, alone.
 Almost, 84/30, almost.

- Al owtlerly, 85/17, utterly.
 Altorenden, 110/10, tear all in pieces.
 Alwey, 56/8, away.
 Alyaunce, 110/7, alliance.
 Alyene, 18/6, to alienate.
 Alyter, 98/29, a little.
 Amenused, 9/1, diminished.
 Amenuseth, 11/34, lesseneth, diminisheth.
 Amenysed, 27/32, diminished.
 Amesureth, 21/16, measureth.
 Amoeved, Amoved, 2/31, 15/3, moved.
 Amonestith, 133/8, admonisheth.
 Amonestyng, 115/28, admonition, exhortation.
 Amonges, 41/10, amongst.
 Amonicion, 7/25, admonition.
 Amynstryth, 105/26, administers.
 Anaxogore, 6/18, Anaxagoras.
 Ancre, 28/9, 39/6, anchor.
 Anguisseth, 62/20, tormenteth.
 Angwissos, 28/19, anxious, sorrowful.
 Angwyssh, Angwysshe, 28/26, 62/2, grief, misery, anguish.
 Angwyssos, 66/25, anxieties.
 An hegh, 119/12, on high.
 Anoy, 84/16, annoying.
 Anoye, 28/15, be not grieved, sorry.
 Anoyeden, 110/16, annoy.
 Anoyos, 3/30, 14/19, annoying, hurtful.
 Anoyously, 63/5, dangerously, hurtfully.
 Answery, 94/1, answer.
 Antheus, 115/12, Antæus.
 Antonius (Caracalla), 59/28.
 Aparailleth, 4/9, adorneth.
 Aparaylementus, 34/16, clothing, ornament.
 Apareylen, Aparelyn, 11/11, 23/11, array, apparel.
 Aparayles, 92/11, apparel.
 Aparseyvede, 81/14, perceived.
 Apartythyth, 84/33, appertaineth.
 Apassed, 31/28, passed away.
 Apayed, 32/28, pleased, satisfied.
 Apayred, 16/8, impaired.
 Apaysede, 115/13, appeased.
 Apeeren, 4/9, appear.
 Apercevyd, 10/1, apperceived.
 Apermanides, 83/15, Parmenides.
 Apertiencen, 57/10, appertain.
 Apertly, 11/1, 70/16, plainly.
 Apetid, 76/19, appetite.
 Aposyd, 15/33, opposed.
 Aprentyd, 129/23, emprinted.
 Apresse, 39/28, oppress.
 Aproche, 19/16, 112/32, 123/20, approach.
 Apurgyng, 99/1, a purging.
 Aquylon, 16/28, 26/30, the wind.
 Arayseth, 92/18, raiseth.
 Arbitre, 119/28, 121/7, will, free will.
 Archadie, 95/21, Arcadia.
 Arcturus, Arctour, 14/13, 103/7, the star.
 Ardaunt, 94/28, ardent.
 Aresten, 21/34, to stop, arrest.
 Aretten, 27/12, ascribe to, impute to.
 Areysen, 86/21, rise.
 Areysyd, 133/9, raised.
 Aristotile, Arystotele, Arystotulis, 63/21, 116/33, 133/31, Aristotle.
 Armures, 4/21, 35/18, 92/14, armour, arms.
 Arpiis, 115/1, the Harpies.
 Arraced, 6/11, 18/6, 77/21, 117/31, to tear, separate.
 Arthow, Artow, 4/23, 7/21, 32/19, art thou.
 Arwys, 115/1, arrows.
 Arysith, 111/26, arises.
 Arysinges, 14/3, 43/16, 103/12, risings.
 Aryve, 39/6, come on shore.
 Aryvede, 95/10, brought on shore.
 Asayle, 37/39, to assail.
 Ascapyng, 98/17, escape.
 Asemble, 62/30, gather together, amass (money).
 Aspere, 21/26, 63/6, sharp, rough.
 Aspre, 48/19, sharp.
 Asprenesse, 98/34, sharpness.
 Assaied, 28/34, essayed.
 Assaye, 17/4, test.
 Assaye, 19/1, say.
 Assoyled, 138/25, absolved.
 Assoylen, 116/2, 120/6, to absolve, pay, dissolve.
 Assyngned, 110/24, assigned.
 Ast, 18/20, hast.
 Asthonyng, 4/24, astonishment.
 Astoned, 3/20, 49/16, astonished.
 Astonyd, 95/3, stupid.

- Astonyenge, 102/26, astonishment.
 Astronomy, 4/4.
 Ataast, 20/18, taste.
 Atayne, 7/2, 29/8, to reach, attain.
 Ataynt, 20/32, 54/32, attained.
 Atemprounce, 107/27, tempering, temperament.
 Atempre, 48/13, moderate.
 Atempre, 19/21, modest.
 Atempreth, 4/8, 14/8, 111/23, moderating, tempering.
 Atemprynge, 126/28, controlling.
 Ateynith, Atteyneth, 90/15, 46/24, attaineth.
 Athenes, Athenis, 15/13, 129/14, Athens.
 Atre, 54/7, a tree.
 Attrides, 114/12, Atrides.
 Atwyne, 77/18, in two.
 Auctorite, 3/20, authority.
 Auncestris, 61/13, ancestors.
 Auster, 19/6, 26/28, the cold wind.
 Autompne, Autumpne, 4/10, 14/11, autumn.
 Avalen, 111/27, fall down.
 Avaunsed, 28/15, advanced, furthered.
 Avauntede, 1/21, boast.
 Avauntynge, 11/33, boasting.
 Aventros, Aventuros, 18/28, 27/14, fortuitous.
 Aventure, 13/6, event.
 Averyce, 56/6, 94/28, avarice.
 Avyse, 135/20, consider, advise.
 L. Itaque si praesentiam [praescientiam *other MSS.*] pensare uelis qua cuncta dinoscit.
 Awaytez, 63/5, snares.
 Awaytor, 94/32, one who lies in wait.
 Awht, 73/16, ought.
 Axed, 9/15, asked.
 Axestow, 10/12, 18/10, askest thou.
 Ay, 39/55, ever.
 Ay dwellynge, 135/2, ever-dwelling.
 Ayeins, Ayenis, 5/32, 6/9, 77/1, against.
 Ayeinward, 29/13, on the contrary, on the other hand.
 Ayeyn, 99/17, again.
 Bachus, 16/30, 35/6, Bacchus, the god of wine.
 Bar, 2/28, 26/3, bore.
 Barayne, Bureyne, 21/31, 90/18, barren.
 Baren me an hand, 12/18, accuse me falsely.
 Basilicis, 9/28, one of Boethius's accusers.
 Basynnes of bras, 103/17, cymbals.
 Basyns, 103/21, basins.
 Bataylen, 11/22, 113/6, to war, to do battle.
 Beemes, 5/13, 61/23, beams.
 Beeryn, 109/10, bear.
 Behated, 58/22, hated.
 Ben, 11/2, been.
 Ben, 62/22, bees.
 Beneme, 29/30, deprive of, take away.
 Bere, 111/15, the Bear, *i.e.* the Polar star.
 Beren, Beryn, 57/1, 133/10, bear.
 Besekyn, 123/20, beseech.
 Bestys, 62/10, beasts.
 Bet, 24/29, be.
 Bet, 39/15, 49/17, better.
 Beternesses, 29/17, bitternesses.
 Betith, 5/11, beateth.
 Bihetist, 87/20, promised.
 Bisegyd, 95/22, besieged.
 Bittre, 6/25, bitter.
 Blake, 19/5, 79/8, black.
 Blases, 103/22, blasts.
 Blawndyssynge, 20/13, 23/13, 84/6, flattery, blandishment.
 Bleched, 37/15, bleached.
 Blemished, 13/3, abused.
 Blende, 19/17, blind.
 Blysfulnesse, 29/6, happiness.
 Blysse, 26/7, blessings.
 Blyssed, 37/43, blessed.
 Blythenesse, 25/27, joyfulness.
 Boch, 56/25, botch, blain, sore.
 Bodith, 111/20, foretelleth.
 Boekys, 15/29, books.
 Boere, Boor, 95/16, 115/15, boar.
 Boetes, 103/10, the star Boötes.
 Bole, 63/14, bull.
 Boot, 41/27, did bite.
 Bordure, 2/20, border, hem.
 Borias, Boryas, 5/10, 14/11, Boreas.
 Bossel, 9/9, bushel (a corn measure).
 Bosses, 50/24, bushes, weeds.
 Bosten, 61/27, to boast.
 Botme, 7/9, 19/8, bottom.

- Bowhte, 9/9, bought.
 Bownte, 39/7, 73/23, goodness.
 Bowntes, 12/13, 27/28, good qualities, kindnesses.
 Bowonte, 83/5, bounty.
 Boylynge tempestes, 26/31.
 Brende, 84/2, 115/7, burnt.
 Brenne, 12/7, to burn.
 Brennyng, 43/23, burning.
 Brennynge, 2/5, shining.
 Brode, 34/14, broadly, plainly.
 Brode shewynge, 47/5, vast expanse.
 Brotel, 63/11, brittle.
 Browht, 78/23, 129/16, brought.
 Brutel, 31/10, brittle, fragile.
 Brutelnesse, 40/1, brittleness, frailty.
 Brutus, 47/15.
 Brwtel, 63/9, brutal, bestial.
 Bryddes, Brydys, 95/5, 115/1, birds.
 Brydlis, Brydul, 15/17, 49/7, bridles, curbs.
 Brykes, 64/10 [Addit. MS. 10,340 'Crikes,' creeks], A.-Sax. *bryce*, E. E. *bruche*, *briche*, break, breach.
 Brystelede, 115/15, bristly.
 Busirides, 41/33, Busiris.
 Bybled, 53/26, covered over with blood.
 Bydewith, 111/30, watereth.
 Bydolgen, 117/5, buried.
 Byen, 9/5, 27/23, buy.
 Byfallen, Byfallyn, 5/28, 20/16, befallen.
 Byfille, 8/8, befall.
 Byforn, 9/20, 21/5, before.
 Bygyled, 16/24, 67/13, beguiled.
 Bygynge, 112/10, beginning.
 Bygynnere, 116/24, beginner.
 Byhest, 116/2, promise.
 Byheten, 54/30, promise.
 Byhetynge, 48/5, promising.
 Byhoveth, 7/23, behoveth.
 Byhyhten, 55/16, 67/10, promised.
 Byhynde, 84/27, behind.
 Byknowen, 70/34, 113/24, acknowledge.
 Bylde, 30/30, build.
 Byleeven, 46/27, believe.
 Byleevest, 18/27, believest.
 By names, 66/7, additional names.
 Bynethe, 34/3, beneath.
 Bynomen, 55/18, taken from.
 Bynomyth, 93/11, taketh away.
 Byrafte, Byrefte, 52/22, 114/31, be-
 refte.
 Byreven, 62/30, bereave.
 Byrthe, 61/22, birth, origin.
 Byryht, 73/22, by right.
 Bysechen, Byshechen, 63/1, 68/4, beseech.
 Bysien, 4/5, to trouble.
 Bysowhte, 84/12, besought.
 Byspetten, 57/22, defouled.
 Bystowed, Bystowyd, 15/31, 83/22, bestowed.
 Bysyen, 101/26, trouble.
 Bysynesse, 56/15, labour, toil.
 Bytakest, 21/27, entrustest.
 Bytwene, Bytwyen, 25/31, 39/1, between.
 Bytwixen, 2/23, betwixt.
 Bytydde, Bytyde, 55/3, 109/17, happened.
 Bytydden, 121/12, befall.
 Bytydeth, 13/4, 20/15, betides, happens.
 Bytydyng, 116/14, happening.
 Bytyng, 50/7, biting, sharp.
 Bytyng, 56/15, heavy, severe.
 Bytyngly, 46/21, sarcastically.
 Bywaylen, 23/29, bewail.
 Bywepete, 114/24, wept ^{for}.
 Bywepetest, 17/15, bewept.
 Byweyledest, 17/15, bewailedst.
 Byweyleth, 95/29, bewaileth.
 Calyope, 84/9, Calliope.
 Cankyr, 16/20, 22, Cancer.
 Canyos, Canyus, 6/20, 11/6.
 Carayne, 91/1, carcass, corpse.
 Cariages, 9/2, taxes.
 Caste, 28/28, chaste.
 Castete, 25/18, chastity.
 Catoun, Caton, 47/16, 108/19, Cato.
 Catullus, 56/24.
 Caucasus, 45/4, the mountain.
 Caudencius, 9/31, one of Boethius's accusers.
 Caytyf, 13/16, 90/20, a wretched man.
 Celebrable, 114/29, commendable, noted.
 Celere, 23/33, cellar.
 Centauris, 114/30, Centaurs.
 Ceptre, 2/29, 43/19, sceptre.
 Cerberus, 84/13, 115/3, the porter of hell.

- Certain, Certeyn, 132/10, 23, certain.
 Certes, 10/5, truly.
 Cesen, 57/29, cease.
 Chalengede, 41/10, claimed.
 Chariets, 126/29, carts, carriages.
 Charyes, 92/13, chairs.
 Charyettes, 26/21, chariots.
 Chastysen, 112/22, to chastise.
 Chaucer's poems, "The Former Age," 36; and "Fortune," 38.
 Chayer, 13/29, 25/29, chair, seat.
 Cheere, 3/16, 7/17, face, countenance.
 Cheryce, 37/22, cherish.
 Chesen, 59/28, choose.
 Chesith, 130/5, chooseth.
 Cheyne, 118/10, chain.
 Chorus, 5/7, 103/22, the wind.
 Chynynees, 7/10, furnaces.
 Chynyng, 17/27, cleft, chink. L. 'hiante ualli robore.' [Addit. MS. 10,340 schynyng, shining?]
 Chyrkyng, 16/26, groaning.
 Cicero's *Book of Divination*, 125/6.
 Circo, 25/32, circus.
 Cirtes, 95/12, Circe.
 Clarre, Clairee, 35/7, 36/16, a kind of wine.
 Claryouns, 35/17, trumpets.
 Cleere, 19/9, bright.
 Cleernesse, 26/20, brightness.
 Clepe, 10/21, call.
 Clepist, 104/6, asked.
 Clepyn, 2/34, call.
 Clepyst, 29/9, callest.
 Cler, 31/5, serene.
 Cleven, 28/9, stick, cling, adhere.
 Clowdeles, 87/3, cloudless.
 Clowmbyn, 45/3, climbed, ascended.
 Clowtes, 6/10, pieces of torn clothes.
 Clyfte, 101/9, fissure, cleft.
 Clymbyn, 2/25, climb.
 Clyveth, 79/22, clingeth.
 Clyvyng, 41/22, 105/9, cleaving, sticking.
 Coempcion, 9/7, coemption.
 Coeterne, 134/17, coeternal.
 Coeveryn, 23/10, cover, obscure.
 Collacions, 97/20, collations.
 Collation, 128/29, comparison.
 Collabryd, 74/10, troubled.
 Comen, 50/25, grow up.
 Committ, 12/10, convicted.
 Commoevede, 84/11, moved.
 Commoevyng, 7/8, moving.
 Compaignie, 56/16, company.
 Comparysoned, 45/32, compared.
 Compaygne, 9/13, Campania.
 Complayde, 3/25, complained.
 Complyssen, 96/24, accomplish.
 Compotent, 134/11, having the mastery.
 Compowne, 68/15, to compose.
 Compowndy, 73/5, compose, form.
 Comprendyd, 4/3, comprehended.
 Comunalitees, 8/6, commonwealths.
 Comune, 11/28, common.
 Comyn, 1/9, 14/8, come.
 Condicional, 136/30, conditional.
 Condysyn, 33/27, condition.
 Confederacie, 41/26, conspiracy.
 Confuse, 103/2, confused.
 Confwndeth, 18/34, confoundeth.
 Confwndyd, 18/16, confounded.
 Congregasyn, 56/26, collection.
 Coningaste, 8/25, Conigastus.
 Conjecte, Conjecten, 17/20, 73/15, conjecture.
 Conjecteth, 120/23, conjectures.
 Conjoined, 57/11, conjoined.
 Conjunction, 80/4, union.
 Conjuracion, 11/8, 41/25, conspiracy.
 Conseite, 70/7, opinion.
 Consequens, 65/33, consequence.
 Consoler, 9/16, councillor.
 Constreynede, 2/10, contracted.
 Constreynyth, 116/20, restraineth, governeth.
 Consulers, 40/26, consuls.
 Consumpte, 47/19, consumed.
 Contemplative life, the, 2/22.
 Contienen, 90/31, contain.
 Contieneth, 128/16, containeth.
 Contrarios, 13/15, adverse.
 Contraryen, 119/20, to be opposed to, adverse to.
 Contre, 29/10, contrary.
 Contumacion, 110/6 [? continuation].
 Convenient, 107/34, fit, convenient.
 Convict, 12/15, convicted.
 Cop, 30/30, top, summit.
 Corage, 4/20, 7/21, 12/21, 53/27, 70/8, mind, spirit, courage.
 Coribandes, 103/19, name of people who think the moon is enchanted when she is eclipsed.

- Coriged, 97/30, corrected.
 Corigit, 113/4, correcteth.
 Corolarye, 72/2, 93/23, corollary.
 Corompen, 77/15, corrupt.
 Corone, Coroune, 72/2, 93/1, crown.
 Coroumpynge, 81/13, corruption.
 Corsed, 36/27, cursed.
 Corsednesse, 71/10, cursedness.
 Corumpe, 75/27, 114/4, to become corrupt.
 Corupsyun, 56/26, corruption, fetid matter.
 Cosynes, 83/24, cousins.
 Countrefeten, 134/27, to counterfeit.
 Coupable, 5/23, guilty.
 Coveiteden, 40/27, coveted.
 Covenable, 76/21, 77/13, fit, convenient.
 Covertoures, 92/11, 124/12, coverings.
 Coverylt, 20/33, covereth.
 Covetise, Coveytise, Coveytyse, 9/18, 12/19, 23/15, 56/12, covetousness.
 Coveyten, 47/8, covet.
 Covynes, 13/20, deceits, collusions.
 Cowched (printed 'towched'), 23/34, laid, set. L. jacere.
 Cowpeled, 124/3, coupled.
 Cowth, 16/4, known.
 Coyn, 36/20, money.
 Creat, 78/6, created.
 Crepin, 132/29, creep.
 Cresus, 23/23, Cræsus, the king of the Lydians.
 Crop, 54/7, top.
 Crwel, Crwel, 1/15, 84/5, cruel.
 Crwelte, 10/5, cruelty.
 Cryed, 9/11, decreed.
 Curacion, 17/6, cure.
 Cure, 28/3, care.
 Cyprian, the accuser of Albinus, 9/22.
 Cyrus, the king, 23/23.
 Cyte, 51/2, seat.
 Cytesenis, 15/15, citizens.
- Dalf, 35/23, 117/4, dug, delved.
 Dampnacion, 10/8, condemnation.
 Dampned, 12/12, condemned.
 Damysel, 20/23, damsel.
 Dar, 26/18, dare.
 Darsthow, 32/16, darest thou.
 Dartes, 102/4, weapons.
- Daunten, 60/10, subdue.
 Dawntede, 114/30, subdued.
 Debonayre, Deboneyre, 14/9, 48/4, gentle.
 Debonayrely, 95/20, mildly.
 Deceyvable, 63/28, deception.
 Deceyvable, 60/18, deceptive.
 Decorat, 57/1, Decoratus, a buffoon and informer.
 Decretus, 10/23, decrees.
 Dede, 43/14, dead.
 Dede, 36/28, did.
 Deef, 1/15, deaf.
 Deepliche, 124/32, deeply.
 Deere, 25/14, dear.
 Deeyn, 111/18, to dye.
 Defaute, 11/14, fault, defect.
 Defendowr, 77/2, defender.
 Defeted, 20/1, enfeebled, weakened.
 Deffaute, 90/1, default.
 Deffendeth, 46/27, forbiddeth.
 Deffendyd, 23/8, forbidden.
 Deffenysshe, 116/13, defines.
 Deffyned, 52/14, defined.
 Deficulte, 44/32, difficulty.
 Defowled, 12/18, 115/7, defiled.
 Defowlen, 57/22, defile.
 Defowlyth, 54/4, defouleth.
 Degrees, 2/23, steps.
 Delices, Delyces, 26/3, 53/12, 62/5, 63/8, delights, voluptuousness, pleasures.
 Delitable, 20/18, delectable.
 Delitablely, 85/6, delightfully.
 Delites, Delyc3, 62/1, 66/22, delights.
 Delvere, 117/14, a digger.
 Delye, 2/14, thin, fine.
 Demestow, 10/17, deemest thou.
 Dempne, 39/17, condemn.
 Denoyed, 69/22, 81/8, denied.
 Denyestow, 100/14, deniest thou.
 Dep, 79/10, deep.
 Departen, 117/27, separate.
 Departyd, 19/13, separated.
 Depnesse, 3/27, depth.
 Deppere, 17/20, 24/31, deeper.
 Dereworthe, 21/9, 28/6, precious.
 Derked, 2/19, darkened.
 Derken, Derkin, 93/28, 118/31, obscure, darken.
 Discovereth, 5/12, discovered.
 Descression, 73/1, discretion.
 Descryven, 78/20, describe.
 Descussed, 5/3, dispersed, scattered.

- Desdaign, 56/23, disdain.
 Desermen, 7/15, disarm.
 Desertus, 13/6, deserts.
 Desiringes, 19/3, desires.
 Desordene, 24/20, inordinate.
 Despendyn, 31/16, spend, expend.
 Desputen, 129/15, dispute.
 Despyce, 30/29, despise.
 Despyseth, 47/12, despises.
 Dessendit, 91/9, descends.
 Desseveraunce, 75/31, separation.
 Desseyvable, 47/28, deceivable.
 Desseyvered, 93/6, dissevered.
 Desseyvesthow, 82/24, deceivest thou.
 Desseyvyed, 4/29, 17/24, 26/2, 74/10, deceived.
 Destempraunce, 77/1, severity.
 Destorbed, 10/15, hindered, prevented.
 Destorbeth, 77/33, disturbs.
 Destrat, 63/6, distracted.
 Destreyned, 42/25, constrained, bound.
 Destynable, 111/2, destined.
 Destynal, 105/20, fatal.
 Destyne, 105/4, destiny, fate.
 Determenye, 99/2, determine.
 Deth, 1/13, death.
 Devynyte, 7/31, divinity.
 Devysyon, 65/3, division.
 Deyed, 35/18, dyed, coloured.
 Deyen, 30/17, 35/9, die.
 Diffinissed, 91/17, defined.
 Digne, 30/1, 135/31, worthy, just.
 Digneliche, Dignely, 42/11, 70/1, worthily.
 Dignete, 12/16, dignity.
 Diogenes, 37/5.
 Dirked, 5/8, darkened.
 Dirknesse, 2/18, darkness.
 Discordable, 111/22, discordant.
 Discorden, 74/1, 107/23, disagree.
 Discordynge, 53/16, disagreeing, disaccordant.
 Discours, 128/29, judgment, reason.
 Disdaignen, 113/26, to disdain.
 Disencresith, 134/30, decreaseth.
 Dishert, 87/26, desert.
 Disordenaunce, 116/20, disorder.
 Disponede, 80/28, disposed.
 Disponith, 105/3, disposeth.
 Dispoylynge, 114/31, spoil, prey.
 Disputacion, 116/11, disputation.
- Dissertes, 122/34, deserts.
 Dissimulen, 139/9, to dissemble.
 Dissimuloure, 38/23, dissembler.
 Dissipule, Dyssyple, 62/18, 68/3, disciple.
 Distemperaunce, 90/23, intemperance.
 Distempre, 94/34, intemperate.
 Distingwed, 32/19, distinguished.
 Dite, 23/31, 60/20, ditty, play, tragedy.
 Divers, 70/31, diverse.
 Diversly, 19/11, going by different routes.
 Dolve, 117/8, should dig.
 Domes, 107/22, judgments.
 Domesman, 43/14, judge.
 Domesthow, 18/19, knowest thou.
 Don, 3/22, do.
 Doom, 118/14, judgment.
 Dowblede, 84/10, doubled.
 Dowblenesse, 37/33, duplicity.
 Dowble vysage, 20/32, two-facedness.
 Dowgter, 28/32, daughter.
 Dowmb, 4/27, dumb.
 Dowttest, 17/21, doubttest.
 Downtos, Downtous, Downtows, 2/9, 20/32, 48/22, 73/9, doubtful, doubted.
 Drawestow, 125/23, drawest thou.
 Drawth, 111/8, draught.
 Drede, 59/16, dread.
 Dredeles, 83/32, fearless.
 Dredful, 95/1, timid.
 Dressinge, 107/10, directing, ordering.
 Dressyth, 110/32, directeth.
 Dreynt, Dreynte, 1/18, 3/27, 114/25, 115/8, drowned, drenched.
 Dronken, Dronkyn, 35/12, 95/25, drank.
 Drowh, 8/33, drew.
 Dryf, 19/15, drive.
 Dulleth, 3/28, to become dull.
 Durablete, 78/2, durableness.
 Duren, 58/4, 76/13, 77/6, endured, to last.
 Dureth, 58/30, endureth.
 Dusked, 2/18, dusky.
 Dwwe, 14/17, due, orderly.
 Dwwelly, 14/19, duly.
 Dydalus, 82/25, Dædalus.
 Dyffynyssed, 69/17, defined.

- Dylysyos, 24/31, delicious.
 Dyomedes, 115/5, Diomede.
 Dyrk, 65/19, dark.
 Dyrke, 60/16, evil, wicked.
 Dyrked, 3/19, darkened.
 Dysmaye, 24/5, dismay.
 Dyspeyre, 20/7, despair.
 Dyvydyd, 105/14, divideth.
 Dyvynenge, 122/8, divination.
 Dyvynor, 122/8, diviner.
- Eched, 60/27, increased.
 Echynnys, 64/16, sea-urchins.
 Eclipse, 103/19, eclipse.
 Eftsones, 54/10.
 Egal, 47/14, equal.
 Egaly, 122/4, equally, evenly.
 Egalyte, 29/14, equality, evenness (of mind).
 Egge, 36/19, edge.
 Egre, 16/19, 35/17, sharp, eager.
 Egreablete, 29/14, goodwill.
 Egren, 109/29, urge, excite.
 Ek, 27/32, 37/36, also.
 Elde, 1/9, old age.
 Elden, 44/1, become aged.
 Eldere, 70/15, 134/24, older.
 Eldres, 40/27, 61/27, forefathers.
 Eldyr fadyr, 28/2, grandfather.
 Eliaticis, the school of, 3/12.
 Elles, 17/9, else.
 Elyne, 114/16, Helen.
 Embelysed, 32/15, embellished, adorned.
 Emperice, 37/25, empress.
 Emprienpted, 130/31, inprinted.
 Emted, 2/7, exhausted.
 Enander, 115/13, Evander.
 Enbasshinge, 86/1, a debasing.
 Enbracest, 32/21, embracest.
 Enbraseth, 128/15, embraceth.
 Encharged, 139/8, imposed.
 Enchaunteresse, 95/31, enchantress.
 Enclynynge, 79/4, embracing.
 Encres, 13/4, increase.
 Endamagen, 9/13, damage.
 Enditen, 1/3, to indite.
 Endyd, 98/31 [dedid = made dead, in Dr. Morris's edition].
 Enformasyoun, 20/15, instruction.
 Enformedest, Enformyd, 6/23, 8/2, informed, instructed.
 Enforseth, 20/5, desireth.
 Engendred, 27/3, begotten.
- Enhanseth, 22/9, exalteth.
 Enhawsen, 94/19, advance, exalt, enhance.
 Enlaced, 62/28, 115/30, entangled, intertwined, perplexed.
 Enlaceth, 7/18, bindeth.
 Enoynted, 24/29, anointed.
 Enpeyren, 93/28, 108/27, impair.
 Enpoysonynge, 6/18, poisoning.
 Enpreynted, 129/20, imprinted.
 Ensaumple, 4/5, example.
 Ensaumpler, 68/20, exemplar.
 Ensaunpyles, 58/32, examples.
 Enstablysshed, 105/7, established.
 Entalenten, 130/25, excite.
 Entechched, 94/4, defiled, polluted.
 Entene, 10/20, intention.
 Entenden, 117/3, to intend.
 Entendynge, 4/17, intent, looking steadfastly on.
 Entensyn, 17/28, intention.
 Ententes, 3/10, endeavours, labours.
 Ententyf, 6/33, 19/24, attentive.
 Ententyfly, 81/17, attentively.
 Entre, 18/15, 20/14, beginning.
 Entreachanged, 102/20, interchanged.
 Entreachaungynge, 14/18, 26/32, 102/31, 117/30, interchanging.
 Entrecomunyng, 44/33, commerce, communication.
 Entrelaced, 82/25, intermingled, entangled.
 Entremedled, 42/21, intermixed.
 Entremetith, 82/11, intermeddeth.
 Envynemeth, 94/10, poisoneth, infecteth.
 Envyroryng, 44/12, 112/3, encirclement, circumference.
 Envyrourde, Envyrourdede, 22/29, 59/20, surrounded.
 Epicurians, the, 6/5.
 Epicurus, 52/20.
 Ereules, 42/1, 104/13, 115/6, Hercules.
 Ere, 1/15, ear.
 Ere, 56/14, plough.
 Eres, 49/16, ears.
 Eritage, 6/2, heritage.
 Erste, 75/8, first.
 Erthelyche, Erthelythe, 41/8, 54/17, earthly.
 Erudice, 84/32, Eurydice.
 Escapyn, 28/13, escape.

- Eschaufed, 14/15, 16/8, become hot, burned.
 Eschaufen, 57/30, make hot, chafe.
 Eschaufet, 110/16, hot, warm.
 Eschue, 59/15, avoid.
 Eschueth, 76/15, escheweth.
 Eschwen, 113/7, eschew.
 Est, 14/4, east.
 Est sones, 54/10, for 'Eftsones.'
 Estabelyssed, 9/8, established.
 Estable, 27/4, stable, firm.
 Estat, 14/15, 20/3, estate, state.
 Estatutes, 20/22, statutes.
 Esyere, 16/19, more easy.
 Eterne, fro eterne, 119/4, 121/10, 134/10, eternal, from eternity.
 Eternite, 133/19, eternity.
 Ether, 101/4, either.
 Ethna, 35/22, 40/23, Etna.
 Etin, 84/21, eat.
 Eufrates, 117/23, Euphrates.
 Eurippe, 22/5, Euripus.
 Eurus, 30/28, 95/10, the wind.
 Eurydyppys, 62/18, Euripides.
 Even, 35/5, evening.
 Evenelyche, Evenliche, Evenelyk, 16/9, 89/17, 111/23, evenly.
 Everich, Everych, 6/6, 28/7, 77/3, every.
 Everydel, 6/12, 20/34, all, every way, everything.
 Evc sterre, 14/2, evening star.
 Excercen, 41/18, to exercise, practise.
 Excercitacion, 109/8, exercisc.
 Excussion, Excussyon, 8/15, 40/3, execution.
 Exil, Exilinge, 6/18, 29/9, exile, banishment.
 Exiteth, 130/29, exciteth.
 Eyen, 2/5, 63/22, eyes.
 Eyr, 31/6, 103/13, air.
 Eyres, 28/30, heirs.
 Faaden, 93/11, fade.
 Fabrycius, 47/15, Fabricius.
 Faderes, 11/24, fathers.
 Faigne, Feigne, 71/3, feign.
 Falsnesse, 15/33, falsity.
 Famuleres, Famyleres, 6/14, 11/17, familiars.
 Famyларыte, 20/5, familiarity.
 Fantesyre, 36/21, fancy, inclination.
 Fason, 49/8, fashion.
 Fasterc, 18/30, quicker.
 Fastne, 14/32, 87/15, fasten.
 Fastnedc, 5/18, fastened.
 Fawht, 115/10, fought.
 Faylyde, 51/10, failed.
 Faylynge, 134/16, ending.
 Fayr, 20/10, fair, good.
 Feblere, 65/9, feeble.
 Feblesse, 59/25, 63/27, 87/29, feebleness.
 Feele fold, 20/4, manifold.
 Feelynge, 76/17, living.
 Feerse, 114/24, fierce.
 Feffedest, 26/1, paid tribute to, endowedst.
 Felawe, 57/3, fellow-worker.
 Felawes, 48/22, fellows.
 Felawshipith, 86/31, accompanyceth.
 Felistow, 7/20, feelest thou.
 Fellyche, 26/28, fiercely.
 Felnesse, 16/27, fiercencss.
 Felonos, 11/16, 71/19, wicked, depraved.
 Felonos, 7/13, felons.
 Felonyes, 96/31, crimes.
 Fer, Ferre, 15/6, far.
 Ferme, 14/32, make firm.
 Fermely, 122/16, firmly.
 Fern, 50/24, ferns, weeds.
 Ferne, 47/9, far-off, distant.
 Ferthe, 44/17, fourth.
 Fertherest, 106/14, farthest.
 Fesissien, 5/17, physician.
 Festyvaly, 46/10, gaily.
 Fette, 36/22, fetched.
 Fey, 87/31, faith, truth.
 Feynede, 46/17, feigned.
 Feynen, 134/27, to feign.
 Feynest, 20/2, faintest.
 Fichched, 78/28, fixed, implanted.
 Fille, 33/23, abundance.
 Flaumbe, Flawmbe, Flambe, 26/22, 40/23, 103/11, 111/18, flame.
 Fleen, 118/15, to be shunned.
 Fleen, 30/33, fly from.
 Fleetyn, 28/12, pass away.
 Fleetynge, 6/30, flitting.
 Fleezes, Flezes, 35/7, 35/9, fleeces.
 Fleme, 19/16, banish.
 Flen, 66/15, 97/33, to flee, fly from.
 Fles, 36/18, fleeces.
 Fleten, Fletyn, Fletyngc, 18/22, 19/11, 56/11, 107/8, 117/29, pass away, flow.

- Fleth, 62/23, flies.
 Fletith, 4/10, aboundeth.
 Flettynge, 27/2, changing, fickle.
 Flitte, 53/20, 67/8, remove.
 Floteryn, 78/23, float.
 Floterynge, 68/15, floating.
 Flowren, 102/12, flourish.
 Flowrith, 85/24, flourisheth.
 Flyttynge, 21/13, 63/120, fleeting, changing, fickle.
 Foddre, 115/4, fodder.
 Foleyn, 52/27, act foolishly.
 Folueth, Folweth, 61/15, 71/7, followeth.
 Folyly, 6/30, 107/8, foolishly.
 Fookkes, 8/26, folk, people.
 Fool, 4/15, fowl.
 Fool, 24/15, full.
 Fooldesthow, 82/27, foldest thou.
 Forbrak, 85/10, broke, interrupted.
 Fordoon, 49/8, undo, destroy.
 Fordryven, 6/25, driven about.
 Forehevyd, Forheved, 10/3, 133/9, forehead.
 Foreyne, 9/30, foreign.
 Forgoon, 63/7, forego.
 Forknowynge, 138/21, foreknowledge.
 Forlesten (*pret.* of *forleve*), 5/4, left.
 Forlete, Forleten, Forletyn, 2/18, 56/15, 61/30, to forsake, leave, neglect.
 Forleteth, Forletith, Forleetheth, 3/28, 14/15, 34/10, forgetteth, leaveth, forsaketh, loses.
 Forlong, 93/1, furlong.
 Forlorn, 94/22, lost.
 Forlyved, 61/29, living.
 Forlyven, 61/20, degenerate from.
 Forpampred, 36/5, overpampered.
 Fors, 38/13, force; 'no fors,' no matter.
 Forseyde, 10/8, 128/25, foresaid.
 Forswerynge, 14/24, perjury.
 Forthere, 28/15, 90/13, to further, promote.
 Forthi, Forthy, 6/24, 18/19, 28/16, therefore.
 Fortlinke, 28/15, grieved, sorry.
 Fortroden, 85/25, trodden upon, trampled.
 Fortuit, 117/11, fortune.
 Fortune, the blind goddess, 20/33.
 Fortunel, 117/32, fortuitous.
 Fortounous, 17/11, 29/31, 102/26, fortuitous.
 Fortunows, 17/9, fortunes.
 Forward, 54/32, foremost.
 Forwes, 36/12, furrows.
 Forwh, 132/30, furrow.
 Forwitere, 158/34, foreknower.
 Foryeeten, 18/20, forgotten.
 Foryetinge, 45/20, forgetfulness.
 Foryetynge, 18/17, 79/20, forgetting.
 Foundement, 77/5, foundation.
 Fowle, 14/30, 31/12, 52/35, bad, foul.
 Fowleste, 7/3, foulest.
 Fownden, 62/14, found.
 Fowndyn, 30/26, establish.
 Fram, 14/14, from.
 Freele, 41/14, 48/11, frail.
 Frelenesse, 87/30, frailty.
 Freten, Fretyn, 53/31, 114/25, 115/6, devour, eat up.
 Frounce, 5/1, flounce.
 Fructefyng, 3/4, fruitful.
 Fructes, 32/20, fruits.
 Frut, 23/12, fruit.
 Fulfyd, 56/4, fulfilled.
 Fulfylled, 12/34, 25/32, satisfied.
 Fulfyllynge, 62/2, satisfying.
 Furijs, 84/15, the three Furies.
 Futures, *adj. pl.*, 135/17.
 Fwonde, 18/15, found.
 Fychchen, 31/2, 69/6, fix, fasten.
 Fylonye, 56/28, villainy.
 Fylthe, 10/11, vileness.
 Fyn, 54/20, 78/35, end.
 Fynyshed, 97/11, finished.
 Fyrthest, 106/19, furthest.
 Gabbe I?, 34/22, am I deceived?
 Gaddered, 88/15, gathered.
 Gadery, 16/25, gather.
 Gaines, 90/6, gains, rewards. L. leuia aut ludicra praemia.
 Galentyne, 36/16, a dish in ancient cookery made of sopped bread and spices (*Halliwel*).
 Galles, 37/17, galls.
 Gapeden, 9/19, to desire, be greedy for.
 Gapynges, 24/18, desires.
 Garnement, 5/1, garment.
 Gastnesse, 59/13, terror, fear.

- Gayus Cesar Germeynes son, 11/7.
 Gemmys, 36/30, precious stones.
 Gentellesse, Gentillesse, 40/11, 61/9,
 nobility.
 Geometryens, 71/33, geometricians.
 Gerdoned, 93/21, rewarded.
 Gerdonynge, 112/20, rewarding.
 Gerdoun, Gerdoun, 12/1, 94/1, re-
 ward.
 Gernerres, 9/4, storehouses of corn.
 Gesse, Gessen, 10/29, 11/26, 51/28,
 to suppose, estimate, deem.
 Gessing, 13/5, 13/12, opinion, sup-
 posing.
 Gest, 26/12, guest.
 Gestys, 41/34, guests.
 Gladyn, Gladyd, 25/3, 28/31, glad-
 den.
 Glosynge, 26/1, deceitful.
 Glotonos, 16/29, greedy.
 Gnodded, 36/11, pounded.
 Gobet, 35/23, 117/5, a bit (of gold).
 Godhed, 95/21, divinity.
 Goedes, 32/22, goods.
 Goost, 27/30, spirit, ghost.
 Goth, 47/10, goeth.
 Goths, Theodoric the king of the, 9/3.
 Governauce, 21/32, 57/3, control,
 government.
 Governayle, 17/22, government.
 Governementus, 8/12, governments.
 Goye, 139/11, joy.
 Grauntisthow, 75/20, grantest thou.
 Grec, 83/15, Greek.
 Greek letters wrought on the dress
 of Philosophy, 2/21-24.
 Gretnesse, 63/13, size.
 Grettyst, 83/11, greatest.
 Grevos, 8/21, grievous.
 Grobbe up, 36/29, grub up.
 Grond, 36/15, did grind.
 Greynes, 50/25, grains (of corn).
 Greythed, 12/8, devised, prepared.
 Gyauntz, 82/13, giants.
 Gyderesse, 85/12, a female guide.
 Gydyngge, 86/22, guiding.
 Gynnes, 64/7, snares, traps.
 Gyle, 55/23, guile, stratagem.
 Gylt, 10/12, guilt, crime.
 Gyse, 55/31, 104/32, guise, mode.
 Gyser, 84/21, gizzard.

 Ha, 81/1, have.
 Habownden, 13/20, abound.
 Habowndeth, 64/13, abounds.
 Habytacule, 44/31, habitation.
 Halden, 28/11, to hold.
 Haldith, 79/22, holdeth.
 Haled, 54/7, pulled.
 Haleth, 48/17, draweth, draggeth.
 Halt, 39/6, 44/13, 49/10, 87/8, 130/
 19, holds.
 Hap, 116/14, fortune.
 Happes, 17/9, haps.
 Hardnesse, 102/29, hardship.
 Hardyly, 23/6, boldly.
 Harmes, 13/3, evils.
 Hasted, 1/10, hastened.
 Hasthow, 15/18, hast thou.
 Hat, 28/30, 59/20, hath.
 Hates, Hatrede, 9/22, 101/26, hatred.
 Haunted, 5/19, frequented.
 Haunten, 41/18, to practise, exer-
 cise.
 Havyngge, 24/22, possessing.
 Hawes, 36/7, berries of the dog rose.
 Heere, 25/28, their.
 Heeres, 1/11, hairs.
 Hef, 2/12, raised, heaved.
 Hele, Heele, 18/16, 52/11, 73/26,
 health.
 Henward, 9/26, those.
 Henten, 9/21, to seize.
 Henteres, 7/3, hunters.
 Hepin, 118/33, heap up, increase.
 Hepyth, 102/26, increaseth.
 Herberveden, 41/34, harboured,
 lodged.
 Herbyform, 17/15, 60/32, hereto-
 fore.
 Hercules, 114/29. *See* Ercules.
 Heren, 100/13, hear.
 Heres, 50/25, ears (of corn).
 Herkne, 49/17, harken.
 Hertes, 56/19, hearts.
 Hertes, 83/32, harts.
 Herthe, 119/13, earth.
 Herthely, 50/13, earthly.
 Hertyd, 43/13, hearted.
 Heryed, 86/5, praised.
 Herynus, 74/14, the river Hermus.
 Hesperus, 14/2, 111/19, the evening
 star.
 Hete, 18/29, heat.
 Heved, 1/12, 84/14, head.
 Hevenlyche, 3/33, heavenly.
 Hevith, 130/6, heaveth.
 Hevyere, 20/24, heavier.

- Hevyeth, 133/5, to make heavy.
 Heye, Heygh, 47/13, 92/13, 103/13, high.
 Heyere, 111/9, higher.
 Heyeste, Heyiste, 2/22, 128/15, 113/6, highest.
 Heyhte, 5/7, called.
 Heyhte, 86/21, 111/12, height.
 Heyoste, 47/14, highest.
 Hiede, 24/8, pour.
 Hihite, 25/31, called.
 Hit, 121/22, it.
 Holden, 46/22, held.
 Holdestow, 21/8, holdest thou.
 Holsom, 17/19, 35/11, wholesome.
 Holy howses, 9/34, sanctuaries for refuge.
 Holyly, 70/24, wholly, entirely.
 Homer, the sweet-mouthed, 119/7.
 Hond, 36/10, hand.
 Hongyr, 56/1, hunger.
 Honte, 64/9, hunt.
 Honyede, 54/2, honied.
 Hool, Hoole, 66/13, 69/31, whole.
 Hoolnesse, 107/19, wholeness.
 Hooly, 14/22, holy.
 Hoomlich, 83/8, homely.
 Hoop, 10/34, 19/16, hope.
 Hoore, 1/11, hoary.
 Hoote, 14/8, hot.
 Hoot yren, 10/4, hot iron. [Dr. Morris's edition reads "hoke of iren" = "iron hook."]
 Hors, 50/29, horse.
 Hovyd, 137/26, behoved.
 Howndes of the palyse, 9/17, the officers of the palace.
 Hows, 52/26, house.
 Humblesse, 63/4, humility.
 Hungry tyme, 9/11, time of famine.
 Hurtelith, Hurtelyn, 20/12, 130/16, to rush against, oppose.
 Hust, 35/17, hushed.
 Hy, 19/12, high.
 Hyden, 64/7, set.
 Hydere, 117/9, hider.
 Hyen, 78/25, come together.
 Hyene, 39/3, hyæna.
 Hyere, 2/13, higher.
 Hyhten, 5/10, 43/20, 115/1, called.
 Hyhteth, 4/9, adorneth.
 Hyr, 53/26, their.
 Hyre, 1/19, her.
 Hyye, 14/13, high.
- Iben, 126/10, been.
 Iblamyd, 3/16, to be blamed.
 Ibowed, 107/6, bent, turned.
 Ibowht, 84/25, bought.
 Icawlht, 74/5, caught, entangled.
 Icoromped, 118/22, corrupt.
 Icovered, 103/16, covered.
 Idowted, 127/14, doubted.
 Idra, 115/6, Hydra.
 Ifelawshipped, 42/9, associated, united.
 Iflyt, 4/2, flitted, removed.
 Igetyn, 24/16, gotten.
 Ihardy, 103/24, hardened.
 Ihevyd, 133/10, raised, heaved.
 Ihydd, 96/3, hidden.
 Ijoigned, 42/10, joined.
 Ikountynued, 132/30, continued.
 Ilad, 25/26, 134/20, led.
 Ileten, 101/16, permitted.
 Ilorn, 48/27, lost.
 Imaked, 68/21, 134/24, made.
 Imedled, 17/1, mingled.
 Imperial, 3/20, august.
 Imperisse, 85/24, empress.
 Imperiye, 40/25, government.
 Impetrent, 123/21, obtain. [See Dr. Morris's note on Emprenten.]
 Implieth, 117/32, enfoldeth, incloseth.
 Inconvenient, 123/1, inconvenience.
 Inde, 95/20, India.
 Indus, 74/15, the river.
 Infect, 103/14, infected.
 Infinite, Infynyte, 105/12, 134/1, infinity, without end.
 Infirme, 119/9, feeble.
 Infortune, 62/19, 86/13, misfortune.
 Inmoevablete, 134/28, immobility.
 Innerest, Inneryste, 106/10, 107/26, innermost.
 Inowgh, Inowh, 7/26, 36/11, enough.
 Inparfyt, 69/23, imperfect.
 Impressed, 130/12, impressed.
 In somme, 10/12, in the end.
 Instauce, 130/22, presence.
 Insylite, Inshyte, 18/34, 124/7, insight.
 Interse, 40/9, interest.
 Inwith, 21/21, within.
 Iplited, 5/1, pleated, folded.
 Iplownged, 111/19, plunged.

Iproeved, 134/10, proved.
 Isene, Iseyn, 56/29, 124/32, 127/18, seen.
 Isent, 5/10, sent.
 Ishad, 35/17, 54/5, 102/15, shed, scattered.
 Ishet, 132/26, shut.
 Ishewyd, 33/7, 70/2, shown.
 Isped, 125/8, made clear, determined.
 Issest, 82/27, issuest.
 Issw, 17/3, issue.
 Istrengthened, 136/14, strengthened.
 Ithewed, 108/22, behaved.
 Itlrongen, 44/27, pressed, squeezed.
 Itowched, 16/3, touched.
 Itreted, 102/14, handled, performed.
 Iwist, 120/19, 127/10, 28, known.
 Iwitnesshed, 134/9, witnessed.

 Jangelynge, 53/32, chattering.
 Jape worthi, 122/8, ridiculous.
 Joignen, 83/32, to join.
 Jolyte, 62/12, pleasure.
 Jowwes, 9/19, jaws.
 Joyncture, 32/5, juncture, joining.
 Jubyter, Juppiter, 23/33, 37/27, Jupiter, Jove.
 Juge, 12/12, a judge; 42/15, to judge.
 Juggement, 2/9, judgment.

 Kacheche, 64/7, catch.
 Kacus, 115/13, Cacus.
 Kalm, 23/13, calm.
 Kaptevite, 23/28, captivity.
 Kartere, 126/28, carter, coachman.
 Kartes, 126/29, carts, carriages.
 Karve, 35/14, cut.
 Kaves, 5/11, caves.
 Kawth, 23/24, caught.
 Kaytyfs, 119/1, catiffs.
 Kembd, 14/24, 58/20, combed.
 Kene, 38/27, sharp.
 Kerve, 50/23, cut.
 Keye, 81/12, helm.
 Klennesse, 105/1, clearness.
 Klothinge, 32/33, clothing.
 Klowdes, 119/14, clouds.
 Klyfte, 65/1, cleft.
 Knettynge, 116/15, knitting.
 Knoleche, 87/1, knowledge.
 Knowlechinge, 130/23, knowledge.
 Knowstow, 4/23, knowest thou.

Knowy, 131/32, knowledge.
 Knowynge, 18/5, 34/11, 48/25, knowledge.
 Knyt, 59/29, 86/32, knight, soldier.
 Kontek, 101/28, contest, strife.
 Korn, 50/24, corn.
 Korven, 2/26, 6/9, cut, rent, tear.
 Koude, 115/9, could.
 Kragges, 117/24, crags.
 Krept, 17/26, crept.
 Kunnynge, 10/8, knowledge.
 Kuttinge, 104/11, 114/20, cutting.
 Kyd, 37/16, known.
 Kynde (of), 34/12, naturally.
 Kyndeli, Kyndeliche, 79/15, 89/4, naturally.
 Kynredes, 28/25, 47/11, kindred, families.
 Kythen, 40/1, make known, show.

 Lache, 95/3, slow, lazy.
 Lad, 23/25, 126/19, led.
 Laddres, 2/24, ladders.
 Lafte, 48/23, left.
 Lakkit, 88/3, lacketh.
 Lambyssh, 37/20, lamblike.
 Languesse, 96/27, languish.
 Languyssesst, 20/1, languishest.
 Langwissyng, 101/19, languishing.
 Lappe, 4/33, flap.
 Largesse, 31/18, liberality.
 Lasse, 68/32, less.
 Last, 28/23, lasteth.
 Lat, 19/16, 54/8, let.
 Late, 103/11, last.
 Laued, 84/8, sang.
 Laus, Lavse, 30/32, 106/21, loose, free.
 Leche, 7/23, 89/25, physician, doctor.
 Leef, 25/14, dear.
 Leese, Leesyn, 29/29, 30/9, 55/27, 110/2, lose.
 Leeseth, 14/2, loseth.
 Leest, 29/8, smallest.
 Leeste weye, 126/11, least way, least wise.
 Leesyng, 109/34, loss.
 Leesynges, Lesing, 10/28, 121/28, lies, falsehoods.
 Leeves, 14/10, leaves (of trees, etc.).
 Lemes, lymes, 95/27, 96/2, limbs.
 Lengere, 41/1, 75/32, longer.

- Leten, 5/26, to leave; 48/18, to esteem.
 Leve, 99/25, permission, leave.
 Leveful, 5/26, 10/27, 96/16, lawful, allowable.
 Leven, 99/19, believe.
 Lever, 4/24, more likely.
 Leveth, 24/23, liveth.
 Leveth, 108/9, alloweth, giveth.
 Levyng, 7/5, 34/12, living, daily life.
 Liggeth, 47/19, lieth.
 Liggynge, 114/25, lying.
 Litarge, 4/28, lethargy.
 Litestere, 36/17, a dyer.
 Lith, 129/30, lieth.
 Lith, 95/4, light.
 Lithly, 126/26, quickly, easily.
 Loeketh, 21/16, looketh.
 Lokyn, 87/16, look.
 Lookynge, 4/18, 5/18, 74/17, 126/31, sight.
 Lorel, 13/21, a wretch.
 Lorn, 23/7, 34/33, lost.
 Lorshippe, 58/23, lordship, power.
 Loth, 27/29, loath.
 Lucifere, Lucifer, 14/5, 50/28, 111/20, Lucifer, the morning star.
 Lukan, 108/17, Lucian.
 Luxures, 62/8, luxuries.
 Lybye, 115/13, Lybia.
 Lydyens, 23/23, the Lydians.
 Lye, 26/5, lay.
 Lyfly, 2/6, lifelike.
 Lyhte goodes, 1/17, temporal goods.
 Lyhtes, 14/2, lights.
 Lyhtneth, 99/23, enlighteneth.
 Lykerous, Lykoros, 37/27, 57/4, lecherous.
 Lykned, 10/5, 94/31, likened.
 Lyknynges, 20/31, pleasures.
 Lymes, 55/33, limbs.
 Lynage, 28/25, lineage.
 Lyouns, 53/23, lions.
 Lyssheth, 22/11, laughs at.
 Lythly, 6/30, 35/4, easily.
 Lythnesse, 3/33, 77/11, light, brightness.
 Lytul, 17/15, little.
 Maad, 27/30, weary, dejected.
 Madyr, 36/17, a red dye.
 Magestrat, 57/1, magistracy.
 Maked, 2/14, 10/33, made.
 Maledye, 3/6, disease.
 Malefice, 12/33, sorcery.
 Malice, 12/31, wickedness.
 Manassinge, Manasyng, 30/29, 92/14, threatening, menacing.
 Manesses, 7/8, 21/18, menaces.
 Marchus tullius, 45/2, 125/4, Marcus Tullius Cicero.
 Mareys, Marys, 44/21, 76/24, marsh.
 Margaretes, 74, note 4, pearls.
 Marmorike, 95/17, ? Marmarica, part of Libya, between Cyrene and Egypt.—*Lempriere*.
 Maryaage, 114/15, marriage.
 Maryes, 76/31, pith, marrow (*medulle*).
 Mast, 36/7, beech nuts.
 Mawgre, Mawgre, 55/18, 21, in spite of.
 Maysteresse, 10/17, mistress.
 Maystow, 18/9, 77/3, mayest thou.
 Maystrye, 8/19, masterhood.
 Meche, 24/15, 30/15, much.
 Mede, 72/2, meed, reward.
 Medleth, 19/7, 74/16, 95/13, mixeth.
 Medlyng, 12/17, mixing.
 Meedes, Meedis, 35/20, 90/6, rewards.
 Meene, 68/27, mean; 114/4, the mean, or middle path.
 Meenelyche, 19/2, moderate.
 Melle, 36/6, mill.
 Menbrys, 61/25, bodies.
 Meneden, 116/23, meant, intended.
 Menelaus, 114/16.
 Meracle, 104/5, miracle.
 Mercurie, 95/21, Mercury.
 Mermaydenes, 3/13, mermaids.
 Mervayles, 20/4, marvellous.
 Merveylen, 32/15, 83/23, to marvel.
 Merveylyng, 5/14, wondering.
 Mery, Merye, 31/2, 66/1, pleasant.
 Meryly, 46/10, pleasantly.
 Merynesse, 52/4, pleasure.
 Meschef, 27/20, mischief.
 Mesure, 2/11, stature.
 Mesuren, 51/27, to measure.
 Metes, 35/2, fruits of the earth; 53/24, meats, food.
 Meward, 1/19, towards me.
 Meyne, 33/1, 86/4, servants, domestics.
 Misericorde, 84/23, mercy, pity.

- Mo, 93/33, more.
 Moche, 13/5, many.
 Mochel, 38/11, 62/13, great.
 Mochel, 32/12, much.
 Moedes, 20/24, L. *modos*, measures, tunes, strains.
 Moene, 4/1, the Moon; 111/15, the clerk of the Moon.
 Moevable, 103/26, mobile, fickle.
 Moeven, Moevyng, 4/5, 62/7, 134/29, to move, moving.
 Moevyng, 101/26, motion.
 Mokeren, 31/17, hoarding up.
 Mokeres, 31/17, misers.
 Moleste, 66/19, trouble, grief.
 Monstre, 20/5, prodigy.
 Moore, 100/24, greater.
 Moost, 6/27, 29/6, chief, most.
 Moot, 27/31, 30/7, must.
 Morter, 36/15, mortar.
 Morwe, 14/4, morning.
 Mosten (*pl.*), 129/22, must.
 Mosthow, 75/21, must thou.
 Mot, 60/10, must.
 Mot, Moten, 28/11, 59/6, might.
 Mous, 41/10, mouse.
 Mowe, 19/3, 25/3, may.
 Mowen, 16/18, 19/5, be able.
 Mowht, 8/5, mouth.
 Mowinge, 92/1, moving, motion.
 Mowrnyng, 54/5, mourning.
 Mowynge, 97/1, ability, power.
 Moyste, 30/31, 111/24, moist, soft.
 Muable, 104/28, movable.
 Musculis, 131/9, mussels.
 Musuciens, 42/19, musicians.
 Musy, Mysus, 41/10, 11, mice.
 Musyce, 20/23, Music.
 Mutabylyte, 63/21, changeableness.
 Mutacyouns, 18/22, changes.
 Myhtestow, 6/19, thou mightest.
 Myntyng, 3/29, purposing, endeavouring.
 Mynystreth, 61/23, administers.
 Myrthes, 102/28, pleasures.
 Myrye, 113/9, pleasant.
 Mys, 102/20, badly, wrongly.
 Myseyes, 8/32, grievances, troubles.
 Mysknowynge, 48/13, 79/17, ignorant, ignorance.
 Mystorneth, 54/22, misturneth, misleadeth.
 Mys weyes, 79/2, 116/6, wrong paths.
 Nadris, 132/31, adders, snakes.
 Naked, 115/21, to make naked.
 Nameles, 102/11, unrenowned.
 Namelyche, 97/4, especially.
 Narice, 95/11, Narycia, or Naryx.
 Nart, 15/7, art not.
 Narwh, 44/26, narrow.
 Nas, 17/24, 36/9, was not.
 Nasyoun, 44/29, 57/26, nation.
 Nat, 1/13, 15/7, not.
 Natheles, Natles, 2/25, 21/6, 81/18, nevertheless.
 Naturely, Natureli, 14/22, 75/23, 118/13, naturally.
 Nayteth, 1/16, refuseth.
 Ne, 67/6, know.
 Necesseden, 68/14, necessitated.
 Nedly, 66/8, of necessity.
 Nedy, 22/27, in need.
 Negardye, 39/21, misers.
 Negh, 106/8, nigh.
 Nel, 80/16, will not.
 Nembrot, 37/29, Nimrod.
 Nere, 5/26, 17/17, were not.
 Nero, 43/7, 58/19, 59/27, the emperor.
 Nethereste, 2/20, 25, lowest, nethermost.
 Neweliche, 95/18, newly.
 Newith, 106/32, reneweth.
 Neygh, 103/8, nigh.
 Neysshebour, 25/14, 45/17, neighbour.
 Nhyht, 14/3, night.
 Nil, 84/21, will not.
 Nis, 6/29, 31/12, 122/17, is not.
 Nobely, 2/24, perfectly.
 Noblesse, 28/25, nobleness.
 Noblye, 23/30, nobility, nobleness.
 Node, 59/6, need.
 Nolde, 24/13, 29/15, 55/6, would not.
 Nolden nat, 9/33, would not.
 Nomyus, 56/25, Nonius, a Consul of Rome.
 None, 3/1, 77/8, no.
 Nonepower, 59/7, impotence.
 Nory, Norry, Norye, 5/23, 67/20, 78/27, nursling, pupil.
 Noryse, 5/18, nurse.
 Norysse, 61/29, nurse, nourish.
 Noryssed, 4/19, nourished.
 Norysshyng, Noryssyng, 32/25, 76/30, nourishment, support.

- Not, 17/20, 52/25, know not.
 Noteful, 3/15, useful.
 Nother, 124/29, neither.
 Nothus, 43/22, 50/27, the south wind
 Notus.
 Nower, 57/29, nowhere.
 Nowmbyr, 4/3, 68/22, number.
 Noysen, 61/27, to brag, boast, make
 a noise about.
 Nyce, 115/21, foolish.
 Nyht, 87/3, night.
 Nyllynge, 76/11, 118/19, being un-
 willing.
 Nylt, 88/9, wilt not.
 Nystyst, 80/9, knew not.
- O, 31/23, a, one.
 Obeysaunt, 8/5, 21/33, obedient.
 Objecte, 130/24, presented.
 Occian, 111/18, ocean.
 Ocupye, 114/4, to seize.
 Offence, 36/19, hurt, damage.
 Offencion, 13/3, offence.
 Offense, 57/2, offending.
 Oftyme, 109/1, oft-times.
 Olyfaunt, 63/13, elephants.
 Onknowyn, 36/6, unknown.
 Onsufferabele, 20/7, unsufferable,
 intolerable.
 Oo, 15/14, 74/2, one.
 Oonis, 122/20, once.
 Only, 133/5, only.
 Oonyd, 105/16, united.
 Oores, 35/14, oars.
 Oost, 6/28, host, number.
 Oostesse, 95/23, hostess.
 Oother, 5/15, 34/2, other.
 Ootherweys, 128/5, otherwise.
 Opnen, 116/2, to open, show.
 Opylion, 9/30, one of Boethius's
 accusers.
 Or, 4/31, 62/16, 97/7, ere, before.
 Ordene, Ordenely, 80/25, 86/3,
 109/16, orderly.
 Ordenoure, 81/24, 86/4, ordainer.
 Ordinat, 7/4, ordered, settled.
 Ordure, 19/10, filth.
 Orphelyn, 25/12, orphaned.
 Orpheus, 83/28, the poet.
 Ostelmentus, 33/21, furniture, goods.
 Outrely, 23/2, utterly.
 Overcomer, 4/3, conqueror.
 Overmochel, 62/13, over much, very
 much.
- Overold, 6/21, very old.
 Overthrowen, 13/23, prostrate.
 Overthrowynge, Overthrowenge,
 3/27, 47/3, 109/28, forward, head-
 strong.
 Overtymeliche, 1/11, untimely.
 Overwelneeth, 26/31, tosseth,
 rolleth.
 Owen, 70/19, ought.
 Ow, 17/18, 87/20, the exclamation
 "O!"
 Owhtest, 6/24, 48/18, ought.
 Owtereste, Owtterest, 43/16, 70/1,
 extremest, remotest.
 Owterly, Owtrely, 19/26, 47/19,
 85/9, 112/17, utterly.
 Owtrage, 33/24, 35/4, 36/5, excess.
 Owtrayen, 61/19, 'ultra viare,' go
 or diverge from?
 Owthorw, 7/10, out through.
 Oystrys, 131/9, oysters.
- Paale, 26/24, pale, vanishing away.
 Paas, 12/11, paces.
 Paied, 36/3, satisfied.
 Painted, 87/3, depicted.
 Palys, 15/22, pale; 17/27 (L. uclut
 hiante ualli robore).
 Palyt, 26/22, paleth.
 Papynian, 59/29, Papinian.
 Parchemyn, 129/22, parchment.
 Parfit, Parfyt, 4/20, 28/20, 65/5,
 perfect.
 Parfytyliche, Parfytly, 68/20,
 104/10, perfectly.
 Parsoneres, 132/15, sharers, par-
 takers.
 Parthes, 45/5, the Parthians.
 Partles, 93/20, without a share.
 Party, 29/8, part.
 Paulyn, Pawlus, 9/16, 23/27, a Consul
 of Rome.
 Paysyble, 36/1, peaceable.
 Pees, 111/13, peace.
 Pene, 53/23, Phœnicia. L. poeni
 leones.
 Peraventure, 11/13, peradventure.
 Percen, 63/23, 96/7, to pierce.
 Percyens, 23/27, Persians.
 Perdurable, 2/16, 13/29, 27/3, im-
 perishable.
 Perdurably, 77/7, 128/14, everlast-
 ing, imperishably.
 Perdurablete, 45/23, immortality.

- Performe, 52/29, afford, furnish.
 Perise, 44/3, perish.
 Periseth, 76/6, perisheth.
 Perles, 64/12, pearls.
 Perturba, 18/33, perturbation.
 Perturbacyon, Perturbasyoun, 3/25,
 16/17, perturbation.
 Perverted, 6/15, destroyed.
 Pesyble, Peysyble, 15/2, 69/9, quiet,
 placid.
 Peyne, 9/20, 12/1, 122/24, punish-
 ment.
 Peyntyd, 87/4, painted.
 Phebus, 5/13, 16/21, 86/31, Phæbus.
 Philosophy, as she appeared to
 Boethius, 2, *et seq.*; her discourse
 with Boethius, 5, *et seq.*
 Pictagoras, 12/24, Pythagoras.
 Pitowsly, 23/28, piteously.
 Pittyth, 109/30, putteth.
 Plato, 5/32, 8/5, 68/3, 79/31, 80/1,
 134/15.
 Playnynges, 22/19, complainings.
 Plente, 134/32, fulness.
 Plentevously, 16/4, abundantly.
 Plentivos, 50/22, yielding abund-
 antly, fertile.
 Plentyvous, Plentyvos, 3/4, 4/10,
 52/29, plentiful, affluent.
 Pleten, 22/16, argue, plead.
 Pletynges, 55/22, pleadings, debates.
 Pleyesthow, 82/24, playest thou.
 Pleyne, 11/10, 21/1, complain.
 Pleynede, 84/4, complained.
 Pleynesthow, 23/2, complainest
 thou.
 Pleynly, Pleynlyche, 18/15, 46/4,
 plainly.
 Pleyntes, 86/15, complaints.
 Pleyyth, 21/3, playeth.
 Plownged, 3/18, 51/29, plunged.
 Plowngen, 64/18, plunge.
 Plowngy, 5/8, 50/28, wet, rainy.
 Poliphemus, 114/24, Polyphemus.
 Polut, 12/18, polluted.
 Pool, 103/9, the North Pole.
 Porcionables, 68/22, proportionably.
 Porysmes, 71/34, axioms.
 Pose, 107/25, 126/1, to put a case.
 Postum, 56/25, imposthume.
 Powere, 53/2, power.
 Pownage, 36/7, pasturage.
 Powste, 102/15, power.
 Poyntel, 2/3, 129/25, style.
 Predestynat, 119/5, predestined.
 Prescience, 135/19: L. *praescien-*
tiam or *praevidentiam*, some MSS.;
 tho' most read *praesentiam*.
 Presensse, 134/35, presence.
 Presentarye, 134/26, present.
 Presyous, Presios, 25/15, 56/13,
 precious.
 Preterit, 133/24, preterite, past; *pl.*
 'preterites,' 135/16.
 Pretorie, 9/14, the imperial body-
 guard.
 Prevey, 94/32, secret.
 Preyeden, 83/12, prayed to.
 Preyedest, 16/11, didst pray.
 Preyere, 84/12, prayer.
 Preyses, 21/9, precious.
 Preysynge, 60/26, praising.
 Prikke, 44/13, point.
 Pris, 25/24, price.
 Prisen, 10/29, estimate, judge.
 Probasyons, 20/24, tunes: Addit.
 MS. 10,340 'prolasyons'; '*Pro-*
lation: f. a pronouncing, vtter-
 ance, deliuerie of words.'—*Cot-*
grave. The Latin is 'nunc
 leuiiores nunc grauiores modus
 succinat.'
 Proceede 2/13 [? *percede*, pierced].
 Processes, 70/18.
 Proeve, 120/3, approve.
 Proeved, 69/23, proved.
 Proeven, 70/24, to prove.
 Pronostik, 39/22, prognostic.
 Proposiciouns (Euclid's), 71/33.
 Prospere, 8/25, proper.
 Provostrye, 58/4, provostship.
 Prykke, 78/29, point.
 Prykketh, 66/20, pricketh.
 Prys, 44/11, 99/29, praise.
 Prys, 123/14, price, value; "worthi
 of prys," 15/29, precious.
 Prysoun, 102/17, prison.
 Pryve, 26/4, 54/11, private, privy,
 secret.
 Pablyssed, Pupllisen, 45/17, 77/4,
 to publish, spread, propagate.
 Punysshe, 14/19, to punish.
 Purposede, 137/22, proposed.
 Purple, Purpure, 16/26, 92/13,
 purple.
 Purpres, 58/20, purple clothes.
 Purpyr, 35/11, the Tyrian purple
 dye.

- Purveyable, 53/21, provident, foreseeing.
 Purveyed, Purvyed, 13/7, 120/12, ordained, foreseen.
 Purvyance, Purvyance, 78/5, 104/17, 105/2, 135/23, providence.
 Putte, 85/2, pit.
 Pymment, 35/7, a kind of drink.
 Quereles, 55/22, complaints.
 Quayk, Qwyke, 104/15, 130/13, living.
 Quyene, 39/11, queen.
 Quyerne, 36/6, a mill.
 Qwit, 127/7, quit.
 Raftte, 114/32, bereft.
 Rather, 20/1, earlier, former.
 Ravaynour, Ravyncre, 7/2, 94/29, plunderer.
 Ravenne, 10/2, the city of Ravenna.
 Ravesynge, 14/32, ravishing, carrying off.
 Ravyne, Raveyne, 9/1, 24/17, plunder, rapine.
 Ravyse, 6/6, to snatch.
 Ravysed, 6/29, misled.
 Ravysshenn, 102/22, to carry off.
 Real, 10/16, royal.
 Realte, 39/28, royalty.
 Reaumes, 59/2, realms.
 Rechcheth, 64/17, careth, recketh.
 Recisted, 8/24, resisted.
 Recke, 26/18, to care, reck.
 Recompensacyon, 101/11, recompense.
 Recordedde, 2/1, recounted.
 Recordeddyst, 72/23, didst recall.
 Recordeth, 79/32, recalls.
 Recourses, 4/2, courses.
 Reddowre, 38/13, severity, rigour.
 Rede, 3/33, red (colour).
 Rede see, 56/13, the Red Sea.
 Rednesse, 3/17, flushing.
 Redowtable, 102/12, venerable.
 Redowte, 5/28, to fear.
 Redowted, 45/5, 57/27, feared, venerated.
 Reducen, 63/32, reduce.
 Redyly, 54/7, readily, easily.
 Refect, 111/8, refreshed.
 Referred, 78/23, reduced.
 Refowsestow, 14/16, refusest thou.
 Reft away, 14/11, carried off.
 Refut, 74/9, refuge.
 Regnes, 53/12, 58/29, kingdoms.
 Regulus, 42/1.
 Rekenynge, 26/5, reckoning.
 Rekkeþ, 22/10, recketh.
 Remenbresthow, 18/7, rememberest thou.
 Remordith, 109/5, vexeth, troubleth.
 Remuable, 131/11, able to remove from one place to another.
 Remwed, 7/17, 12/10, removed.
 Remwen, 41/21, to remove.
 Rendynge, 1/3, tearing, torn, renting. L. lacerae camenae.
 Renne, 76/3, run.
 Rennyngge, 35/12, running.
 Renomed, 53/7, 56/30, renowned.
 Renon, 6/21, renown.
 Renovelen, 77/4, renew.
 Repeyrede, 5/4, repaired, came again.
 Repeyreth, 53/28, cometh back.
 Replenysshed, 12/34, replenished.
 Replycasion, 82/28, replication.
 Reproeveth, 130/8, reproveth.
 Repugnenn, 119/21, to be repugnant to.
 Reputasyn, 29/12, reputation.
 Requerable, 41/8, desirable.
 Required, 73/13, required.
 Requereth, 77/34, requires.
 Rescove, 103/20, to recover.
 Rescowedde, 23/26, rescued.
 Resolved, 103/24, melted.
 Resownynge, 84/7, resounding.
 Restingwhyles, 8/17, resting-places.
 Restryne, 14/32, restrain.
 Rethorice, 20/22, Rhetoric.
 Rethoryen, 20/21, rhetorical.
 Retretith, 124/31, considereth.
 Reven, 39/18, 50, rob.
 Reverenc, 58/24, reverend.
 Rewlyche, 23/24, pitiable, sorrowful.
 Reygnen, 19/19, reign.
 Reyjoyseth, 15/15, rejoiceth.
 Reyn, 23/12, 111/30, rain.
 Reynes, 60/12, reins.
 Reynoun, 53/5, renown.
 Rihtwessenesse, 123/14, righteousness.
 Rith, 86/3, right.
 Roche, 19/13, 76/25, rock.
 Rody, 26/26, red, ruddy, blooming.

- Rome, 40/29; certain citizens of, 9/16, 21, 23; the burning of, 43/8.
- Rooes, 64/9, roes.
- Roren, 53/28, roar.
- Rosene, 4/9, 26/21, roseate, ruddy.
- Rosyn, 26/26, rose-coloured.
- Rowte, 33/1, company.
- Royleth, 19/11, runneth, rolleth.
- Ryal, 59/25, royal.
- Rychesses, 6/32, riches, goods, possessions.
- Ryhtwisnesse, Ryhtwysnesse, 9/25, 40/4, righteousness, equity.
- Sachels, 6/33, satchels, sacks.
- Sad, 7/4, 70/4, stable.
- Sadnesse, 86/15, stability.
- Sapyence, 27/23, wisdom.
- Sarpuleris, 6/33, sacks made of coarse cloth.
- Saturnis, 86/32, Saturn.
- Savacion, 8/23, 76/14, safety, salvation.
- Sawse, 36/16, sauce.
- Say, Saye, 2/30, 25/26, 57/4, saw.
- Sayles, 95/10, ships.
- Schapyngge, 99/26, escaping.
- Schatereth, 66/22, scattereth.
- Schorne, 7/2, scorn.
- Scome, 115/16, foam, froth.
- Scorklith, 43/23, scorcheth, burneth.
- Scornesthow, 82/23, scornest thou.
- Scripture, 10/32, writing.
- Secre, 8/17, secret.
- Sedes, 14/12, seeds (of corn).
- Sege, 12/20, seat.
- Sekyn, 17/19, search.
- Selde, 103/27, seldom.
- Selve, 2/13, very.
- Semblable, 33/31, 61/21, 66/28, 77/8, like, the same.
- Semblaunce, 110/33, likeness.
- Semblaunt, 2/4, appearance, countenance.
- Semble, 25/27, assembly.
- Sen, 43/16, see.
- Senek, 59/27, Seneca; Seneciens, 6/20.
- Senglely, 67/5, singly.
- Sensibilittees, 129/18, sensations.
- Sentenses, 13/14, sentences.
- Sentuarye, 10/1, sanctuary.
- Septemyryones, 43/20, the seven stars near the North Pole, the Wain, or Great and Little Bear.
- Serjaunt, 59/20, servants, armed men.
- Servage, 118/28, servitude.
- Seryens, 35/8, Syria.
- Sestow, Sesthow, Seysthow, 38/27, 45/6, 56/27, 112/16, seest thou.
- Sete, 7/29, seat.
- Seyen, Seyh, Seyht, Seyng, 11/26, 12/14, 27/13, 116/14, say.
- Seyn, Seyt, 2/23, 69/12, 134/12, seen.
- Shad, 1/11, 106/18, divided, spread.
- Shad, 62/22, shed, got rid of.
- Shadwe, 26/12, shadow.
- Shadwye, 57/24, shadowy.
- Shaltow, 7/14, 67/9, shalt thou.
- Shapith, 13/21, exerteth.
- Shellen, 10/31, shall.
- Sholden, 4/22, should.
- Sholdesthow, Sholdysthow, 33/9, 39/28, shouldest thou.
- Shollen, 50/32, shall.
- Shrewede, 11/11, wicked.
- Shrewednesse, 11/13, 91/15, wickedness.
- Shrewes, 6/28, 42/8, wicked persons, wretches.
- Shronk, 2/10, shrunk.
- Shuldres, 115/16, shoulders.
- Shullen (*pl.*), 16/15, shall.
- Shyllefyssh, 35/10, shellfish.
- Sikerly, 74/3, certainly.
- Sikernesse, 4/22, 9/34, security, safety.
- Sittinge, 5/26, fitting, becoming.
- Skars, 37/6, scarce.
- Skatere, 69/7, scatter.
- Skyles, 120/32, skills.
- Skylyngge, 106/25, reason.
- Slaked, 49/6, 118/3, slackened.
- Slaken, 53/29, slacken.
- Slakke, 53/19, slackening (of stringed instruments).
- Slakyn, 35/4, to slake (hunger).
- Slawhtre, 11/28, slaughter.
- Sledys, 86/23, sledges.
- Slen, 41/34, 43/11, slay.
- Slepin, 35/11, slept.
- Slepys, 35/11, sleeps.
- Slow, Slowh, Slowgh, 43/9, 104/13, 115/6, slew.

- Slowen, 59/29, slay.
 Slydith, 110/24, slideth.
 Slydyngge, 14/18, changing.
 Snale, 46/8, small, of no avail.
 Smaragdes, 74, note 3, emeralds.
 Smerteth, 27/9, smarteth, paineth.
 Smokede, 2/19, besmoked.
 Smot, 114/27, smote.
 Smothe, 4/5, smooth, quiet.
 Smylyngge, 104/6, smiling.
 Snakis, 132/31, snakes.
 Socrates, 6/1, 10/27, 38/17.
 Sodeyn, 20/15, 97/6, sudden.
 Solutarye, 59/33, solitary.
 Somdel, 16/16, 134/33, somewhat.
 Somer, 14/8, 63/21, summer.
 Somme, 29/6, 63/32, sun, measure, total.
 Son, 53/19, sound.
 Sondes, 76/25, sands.
 Songyn, 85/6, sung.
 Sonnere, 97/2, sooner.
 Sonwh, 103/23, snow.
 Soonges, 84/6, songs.
 Sopose, 108/22, suppose.
 Sorans, 6/20, sorrows.
 Sormounteht, 64/19, surpasseth.
 Sornounten, 63/12, exceed.
 Soriful, 15/4, sorrowful.
 Sorwe, Soruwe, 62/4, *et passim*, sorrow.
 Sorwistow, 18/17, sorrowest thou.
 Sorye, 26/11, sorry, grievous.
 Soth, Sothfast, 11/31, 48/7, 71/30, true.
 Soth, Sothe, 10/28, 79/1, truth.
 Sothere, 67/6, truer.
 Sothfastly, 70/6, truly.
 Sothfastnesse, 78/28, truthfulness.
 Sothnesse, 17/14, truthfulness.
 Sovereynly, 71/27, supremely.
 Soveryn, 28/3, supreme.
 Sowest, 69/1, followest.
 Sowhte, 36/30, sought.
 Sowne, 25/4, to sound.
 Sownyngge, 4/5, sounding, roaring.
 Sowre, 9/11, sore, grievous.
 Sparkle, 82/17, spark.
 Spece, 128/10, species.
 Speculacion, 118/25, looking, contemplation.
 Speden, 125/17, to make clear, explain.
 Spedful, 97/21, 125/20, efficacious, conducive.
 Spedyn, 118/23, to expedite.
 Speeres, 4/2, spheres.
 Spillestow, 7/22, spilllest thou.
 Splaces, 80/26, spaces.
 Sprad, 4/9, 25/33, spread.
 Spraynged, 29/17, sprinkled, mixed.
 Stable, 4/6, firm, fixed.
 Stablely, 105/25, firmly.
 Stableness, Stabylnesse, 18/5, 20/29, stability.
 Stablete, 107/7, stability.
 Stablyssyth, 104/32, to establish.
 Stadie, 93/1, a land measure.
 Stanched, 23/15, satisfied.
 Stant, 5/8, 88/5, stands.
 Stenteth, 31/21, stinteth.
 Steppis, 133/1, steps.
 Sterre, 4/1, 24/12, 26/21, star.
 Sterry, 24/12, starry.
 Sterten, 81/17, to start.
 Stidefast, Stydefast, 1/22, 23/16, 38/17, 70/5, steadfast.
 Stidefastnesse, 76/34, stability, strength.
 Stiere, 81/12, rudder.
 Stierne, 47/15, stern.
 Stille, 47/19, quiet.
 Stintyngge, 47/24, stopping, ceasing.
 Stokkes, 117/31, stocks of trees: L. trunci.
 Stoon, 31/2, stone.
 Stowndes, 16/33, 22/4, 111/25, 138/16, times.
 Stoycyens, 6/5, 129/17, the Stoics.
 Strawght, 132/29, stretched, extended.
 Strem, 19/11, stream.
 Strengere, 6/31, 20/20, 63/13, stronger.
 Streges, 53/19, 84/7, strings (stringed instruments).
 Strepyn, 92/12, strip off.
 Streyhte, 49/16, stretched.
 Streyne, 136/21, constrain.
 Streyte, 47/6, 51/2, narrow.
 Strokk, 119/14, stroke.
 Strompetes, 2/33, strumpets.
 Strondes, 35/15, 64/14, strands.
 Strook, 138/22, stroke.
 Stryf, 9/13, 22/20, strive.
 Strync, 16/29, strain, press.

Studieden, 8/9, studied.
 Styde, 116/10, stead.
 Styde, 69/4, 111/9, to ascend.
 Style, 35/17, quiet.
 Stynte, 19/20, stopped.
 Stynten, 25/4, to stop.
 Styntyth, 94/17, stoppeth, ceaseth.
 Styred, 83/20, moved.
 Suacyon, 20/21, persuasion.
 Subgyt, 63/5, subjects, inferiors.
 Subgyt, Subgyd, 33/26, 53/8, subject.
 Submittedde, 12/5, compelled, forced.
 Suffisaunce, Suffysaunce, 38/15, 55/29, sufficiency.
 Suffisaunt, Suffysaunte, 55/12, 15, sufficient.
 Suffisauntly, 104/9, sufficiently.
 Suffiseth, 56/6, suffices.
 Suffreden, 9/2, suffered.
 Suffres, 14/17, sufferest.
 Sum, 28/24, some.
 Summytted, 69/21, 106/20, submitted.
 Sun, the, 4/1.
 Superfyte, 63/21, surface.
 Supplien, 63/2, supplicate.
 Surte, 36/17, security.
 Sustigne, 39/9, sustain.
 Swerdes, 59/29, swords.
 Swete, 1/14, sweet.
 Swetenesse, 20/21, sweetly.
 Swety, 36/28, sweaty.
 Sweyh, 13/30, whirl (circular motion).
 Swey3, 22/1, whirlings.
 Swich, Swiche, Swych, Swliche, 2/6, 27, 33, 3/9, 73/4, such.
 Swife, 86/24, swift.
 Swolwe, 77/24, swallow.
 Swote, 111/28, sweet.
 Swyfly, 27/8, 63/19, swiftly.
 Syk, Syke, 17/18, 101/2, sick.
 Sykenesse, 62/3, disease.
 Symacus, 27/22, Boethius's wife's father.
 Symplesse, 106/11, simplicity.
 Syn, 17/19, 21/22, since.
 Syngler, 44/34, individual, single.
 Syngler, 25/22, singular.
 Syngulerly, 105/25, singly.
 Sykyr, 6/34, secure, safe.
 Syryus, 14/14, the star Sirius.
 Sysile, 59/11, Sicily.

BOETHIUS.

Tabernacle of this lyf, 26/12.
 Tagus, 74/13, the river.
 Takestow, 17/22, takest thou.
 Talent, 3/3, 20/1, 131/2, affection.
 Tatalus, 84/19, Tantalus.
 Tawhtest, 112/25, taughtest.
 Taylage, 37/24, tollage.
 Tempest, 28/17, troublest.
 Temprede, 84/6, attempered.
 Thanne, 5/10, then.
 Thar, 76/20, need.
 Thechinges, 12/34, teachings.
 Thedyr, 21/28, thither.
 Thei, 14/32, these.
 Theodoric, Theodoryke, 9/3, 57/2, king of the Goths.
 Therwhiles, 137/24, whilst.
 Thewes, 94/7, ways, habits; glost 'conditions.'
 Thikke, 89/28, these.
 Thilke, 1/13, 7/15, 78/20, the same, that.
 Thise, 14/32, these.
 Tho, 3/2, 6/10, 131/2, the.
 Tho, 3/22, 26/1, then.
 Thoght, 105/21, thought.
 Tholome, Ptolemy, 44/18.
 Thonderere, 111/11, thunderer, *i. e.* God.
 Thonderlyht, 7/11, lightning.
 Thondre, 31/3, thunder.
 Thonk, 60/26, thanks.
 Thornesse, 26/29, thorns, hawthorns in flower.
 Thorw, 6/15, through.
 Thowchinge, 10/33, touching.
 Thowht, 'Thowt, 3/26, 27, thought.
 Thrace, 5/11, the country of.
 Thral, 60/15, enthralled.
 Thressshfold, 3/18, threshold.
 Thresten, 32/30, thrust.
 Thriste, Thryst, 99/32, 115/17, thrust.
 Throf, 58/21, throve, flourished.
 Thurst, 24/21, 55/32, 84/19, thirst.
 Thykke, 22/24, these.
 Thynne, 47/16, slender.
 Ticius, 84/21, Tityus.
 Tigris, 117/23, the river.
 To, 64/9, the.
 To-breke, 69/7, break in pieces.
 Todrowen, 6/8, drew asunder.
 To-forn, 130/27, before.
 Togidre, 42/9, together.

M

- To hepe, 109/4, together.
 Tokneth, 16/32, tokeneth.
 Tollen, 44/7, to draw.
 To-morwe, 133/27, to-morrow.
 Tonge, 44/29, speech.
 Tonnes, 23/34, vessels.
 Torenten, 6/9, 123/28, rent asunder.
 Tormentus, 6/19, torments.
 Tornest, 13/29, turns.
 To-torn, 53/30, torn in pieces.
 Tow, 14/28, thou.
 Towched, 23/34, for Cowched, laid, set. L. jacere.
 Towchede, Towchid, 2/11, 108/31, touched.
 Towmblynge, 27/1, 30/4, 67/22, changing, changeable, tumbling.
 Traas, 132/30, trace, track.
 Trace, 83/28, Thracia.
 Tragedyen, 60/19, tragedian.
 Transport, 11/28, transport, throw on.
 Travayle, Travaylen, 5/23, 20/11, 40/8, labour, toil.
 Travayleden, 120/15, laboured.
 Travayleth, Travaylith, 76/14, 124/14, laboureth.
 Trecheryes, 9/32, treacheries.
 Treden, 14/21, tread.
 Trenden, 79/3, roll, turn.
 Trespace, 28/32, wrong-doing.
 Trowblable, 92/18, troublesome.
 Trowble, 19/6, turbid, stormy.
 Trowbly, 103/28, troubled, cloudy.
 Trowe, Trowen, 2/8, 10/26, 17/10, 27/2, trow, know.
 Trowesthow, Trowestow, 5/29, 26/12, 29/7, 67/22, trowest thou.
 Troy, 114/14, the destruction of.
 Trwblynges, 92/19, troubles.
 Trybulasyons, 16/12, tribulations.
 Trygwille, 8/27, 'Triggvilla, regiae praepositus domus.
 Tumolte, 6/34, tumult.
 Turmenten, 9/12, torment.
 Twiterith, 54/6, twitter.
 Twynceled, 26/5, winked.
 Tydeth, 34/8, betides.
 Tygre, 63/14, tiger.
 Tyle, 60/15, Thule.
 Tylyere, 117/8, tiller.
 Tylyinge, 117/4, tilling.
 Tyneo, Plato's, 68/4.
 Tyren, 84/22, to tear.
 Tyrene, 64/10, Tyrrhene.
 Tyresye, 122/8, Tiresias.
 Tyrye, 35/8, 58/21, Tyre.
 Tyryones, vii, 43/20, Septemtriones, the seven stars near the North Pole, called also the Wain and the Great and Little Bear.
 Ulixes, 94/10, 114/23, Ulysses.
 Umble, 22/9, humble.
 Umblesse, 37/25, humility.
 Unagreable, 1/20, unpleasant, disagreeable.
 Unassaied, 28/34, untried.
 Unbityde, Unbytyde, 125/26, 136/19, not to happen.
 Unbowed, 115/18, unbent.
 Uncovenable, 109/28, unmeet, importunate.
 Undefowled, 27/19, undefiled.
 Undepartable, 93/21, inseparable.
 Undescounfited, 7/7, not discomfited.
 Undigne, 42/28, unworthy.
 Undowtous, 116/12, indubitable.
 Undyrnethe, 59/9, underneath.
 Undyrputte, 18/27, put under, subject.
 Undyrstondyn, 19/25, 29/32, to understand.
 Uneschuable, Uneschwably, 117/19, 121/31, unavoidable, unavoidably.
 Ungentel, 28/25, ignoble.
 Ungrobbed, 36/14, ungrubbed.
 Unhoped, 108/20, unexpected.
 Universels, 128/19, universal.
 Universite, 128/12, whole.
 Unjoyful, 32/31, bring no pleasure.
 Unjoynen, 117/27, to separate.
 Unknowable, 47/19, unknown.
 Unknowe, 103/3, unknown.
 Unknowyng, 108/12, ignorant.
 Unknyttyn, 120/6, unloose.
 Unkorven, 36/14, uncut.
 Unkowth, 20/26, unknown, foreign.
 Unkunnyng, 3/7, 6/15, 124/21, unknowing, ignorant.
 Unlaced, 82/26, disentangled.
 Unlefevel, Unlefful, 20/31, 120/3, illicit, unlawful.
 Unlyk, 107/30, unlikely.
 Unneke, 115/4, fierce, cruel.
 Unmoevable, 134/26, immovable.
 Unmoevablete, 106/17, immobility.

- Unmyhty, 7/15, weak, impotent.
 Unnethe, 17/23, scarcely.
 Unparfyt, 65/6, imperfect.
 Unparygal, 49/21, unequal.
 Unpietous, 1/19, cruel.
 Unpleytyn, 48/3, explain.
 Unpleyteth, 129/28, explaineth, unfoldeth.
 Unplitable, 9/12 (*inexplicabilis*).
 Unprofitable man, 3/8, a common man, without education.
 Unpunysshed, 8/31, unpunished.
 Unpurveyed, 20/7, unforeseen.
 Unraced, 86/8, unbroken, whole.
 Unryhtful, 6/1, unjust.
 Unryhtfully, 14/21, unrightfully, unjustly.
 Unscience, 121/20, unreal knowledge, no knowledge.
 Unsely, 96/23, wretched.
 Unselynesse, 96/30, wretchedness.
 Unskyfully, 11/18, unwisely, improperly.
 Unsolempne, 6/21, not famous, not celebrated.
 Unsowe, 36/10, unsown.
 Unspedful, 139/5, unsuccessful.
 Unstaunchable, 46/3, unlimited, infinite.
 Unstanchd, 42/24, uncurbed, unrestrained.
 Unsufferable, 62/4, intolerable.
 Untretable, 47/27, inexorable, implacable.
 Unusage, 44/33, infrequency.
 Unwar, 23/30, 117/7, unexpected.
 Unwarly, 1/9, unaware, unexpectedly.
 Unwemmed, Unwemmyd, 27/19, 138/31, inviolate.
 Unwenyde, 108/20, unexpected.
 Unworshipful, 58/24, dishonoured.
 Unwot, 136/15, knows not.
 Unzely, 27/10, wretched.
 Uphepyng, 25/22, heaping up.
 Uppereste, 2/25, highest.
 Up so down, 121/8, upside down.
 Upsprong, 36/10, upsprung.
 Ursa, 111/17, the Polar star.
 Usage, 3/5, use, subjection, bondage.
 L. assuefaciant.
 Usaunce, 58/12, usage.
 Used, 11/2, 14/4, usual, accustomed.
- Uttereste, 3/23, 77/1, extremest, outermost.
 Vanesshen, 58/2, vanishing.
 Varyauntus, 14/9, varying.
 Vel, 44/22, well.
 Vengerisses, 84/15, she-avengers.
 Venyaunce, 97/31, vengeance.
 Venym, 115/7, venom.
 Venym, 35/8, the celebrated Tyrian dye is here meant.
 Verone, 11/27, Verona.
 Verray, 1/5, 18/34, true.
 Verraylyche, 73/21, verily.
 Vesevus, 7/10, the mountain Vesuvius.
 Visyous, 42/25, vicious.
 Voidede, 10/2, departed.
 Voltor, 84/20, vulture.
 Voyde, 34/29, 44/11, having an empty purse.
 Voyded of, 37/20, emptied of, free from.
 Vyl, 66/16, 86/5, vile.
 Vysyos, 58/27, vicious.
 Vytayles, 58/7, victuals, food.
 Waar, 30/26, wary.
 Wakyng, 115/2, watchful.
 Walvyng, 19/7, tossing.
 Walweth, 40/23, tosseth.
 Wan, 114/16, did win.
 Wan, 16/25, when.
 War, 97/7, 113/15, be aware, take care.
 Ware, 36/22, merchandize.
 Warnestored, 7/1, securely housed.
 Waves, 4/8, 9/8, waves.
 Waxen, 14/13, swollen, increased in size.
 Wayk, 19/1, weak.
 Wayn, 87/11, cart.
 Weche, 14/25, which.
 Weened, 112/29, believed.
 Weenyng, 134/19, opinion.
 Weep (*pret.*), 23/28, wept.
 Weerey, 111/6, weary.
 Welde, 36/17, *qq.* wild, or boiled.
 Weleful, 1/8, 18/20, prosperous, joyful.
 Welefulness, 6/4, prosperity, felicity.
 Welkne, 39/30, welkin.
 Welle, 84/8, 112/3, well, source.

- Wellen, 114/1, to wither, fade.
 Welneeth, 26/31, tosseth, rolleth.
 Welneyh, 52/35, well-nigh.
 Wende, 41/24, weened, thought.
 Wendeth, 46/32, goeth.
 Wene, 3/9, think to. L. putarem.
 Wene, 104/25 [for Weue, L. *con-
 texo*, weave, make, speak].
 Wenen, 56/9, think.
 Wenestow, Weenesthow, 17/8, 18/
 21, knowest thou.
 Wenith, 47/14, thinketh.
 Wenyngge, 6/11, thinking.
 Wepistow, 7/21, weepeth thou.
 Weply, Weply, 2/2, 83/30, tearful.
 Were as, 19/19, whereas.
 Werned, 25/21, refused, denied.
 Werrye, 36/25, to make war.
 Westrene, 111/17, western.
 Wete, 1/5, 5/8, wet.
 Weten, Wetyng, Witen, Wyten, 69/
 16, 102/23, 121/23, 124/15, to
 know, learn.
 Weve, 104/25, weave, make, tell.
 Wex, 129/26, wax.
 Wexen, 16/18, to increase, wax,
 grow.
 Wexeth, Wexit, 3/30, 7/27, 18/33,
 waxeth, increaseth.
 Weyes, 44/32, roads.
 Weyhte, Weyhty, 25/23, 63/13,
 weight.
 Weyther, 120/16, whether.
 Weyues, 103/11, waves.
 Weyve, 19/15, waive, forsake.
 Wham, 70/5, whom.
 Whas, 10/11, was.
 Whel, 13/28, wheel.
 Whennes, 4/5, 11/18, whence.
 Whilom, 3/31, aforesaid.
 Whise, 8/11, 10/30, wise.
 Whyder, Whyderward, 50/10, 138/8,
 whither.
 Whyten, 72/16, to learn.
 Wierdes, 1/9, 7/6, fates, destinies.
 Wiht, 21/11, wight, a man.
 Wikke, 39/15, 88/30, wicked, bad.
 Wilne, 10/19, to desire.
 Wilnynges, 77/27, desires.
 Wist, Wyst, 11/9, known.
 Wit, 128/4, sense.
 Withdrowh, 51/1, withdrew.
 Withholden, 21/34, withstand.
 With-inne forth, 130/30, inwardly.
 Withowteforth, 128/6, outwardly.
 Withseid, Withseyde, 70/23, 116/
 23, denied.
 Withstonde, Withston, 71/19, 139/5,
 withstand.
 Withstonde, 8/24, withstood.
 Wityngge, 121/28, knowledge.
 Wod, 36/17, woad.
 Wode, 26/26, wood.
 Wold, 10/18, willed.
 Wolen (*pl.*), 74/12, will.
 Woltow, 17/4, 76/29, wilt thou.
 Wondyr, 27/8, wondrously.
 Wonen, 47/14, dwell.
 Woode, Wood, 6/34, 7/27, 16/10,
 41/28, furious, mad, angry, raging.
 Wooden, 96/8, to rage.
 Woodeth, 96/15, rageth.
 Woodness, 31/5, 43/25, 84/19, rage,
 madness.
 Woost, Wost, 11/31, 17/30, 136/31,
 knowest.
 Woot, Wot, 17/31, 62/7, know.
 Wopen, 16/7, weeped.
 Wordly, Wordely, 3/31, 63/32,
 worldly.
 Wordyl, 80/10, world.
 Workyn, 139/9, to work.
 Worth up, 23/20, ascend.
 Woxen, 16/16, 84/16, grown, waxed.
 Wrastlen, 90/24, wrestle.
 Wrekere, 114/12, avenger.
 Wrekynge, 114/14, vengeance.
 Writith, 7/10, worketh.
 Wrothly, 3/16, grieved, sad.
 Wryteres, 45/20, authors.
 Wrythen, 119/31, twist, turn, wrest.
 Wyckyd, 50/26, unpalatable.
 Wyht, 11/33, wight, person.
 Wyhte, 30/33, weight.
 Wyle, 104/25, while.
 Wyllyngge, 118/19, 138/33, desire.
 Wymmen, 27/27, women.
 Wymplith, 20/33, veileth.
 Wyngis, 132/32, wings.
 Wypen, 4/32, wipe.
 Wyrkyngge, 75/10, 76/18, working,
 operation.
 Wyttesthow, 18/11, wistest thou.
 Wynnessefully, 102/14, attestedly,
 publicly.
 Yaf, 4/21, 58/24, gave.
 Yald, 114/26, yielded.

- Yave, 25/34, 36/4, gave.
 Yben, 135/4, been.
 Ybownde, 74/6, bound.
 Ycharygd, 56/12, loaded.
 Yclepyd, 1/14, 105/1, called.
 Ydel, 'in ydel,' 2/14, 32/1, 88/5, 122/23, in vain.
 Ydel, 47/16, empty.
 Ydon, 86/21, done.
 Ydrad, 22/8, feared.
 Ydre, 104/12, Hydra.
 Ydymmyd, 26/21, dimmed, becoming less conspicuous : said of the morning star waning through the rays of the rising sun.
 Yerde, 54/6, branch, sapling.
 Yeten, 19/5, get.
 Yeven, 63/2, 109/14, to give, bestow.
 Yevith, 115/24, giveth.
 Yevynge, 31/22, giving.
 Yfalle, 118/28, fallen.
 Yfastned, 13/29, fastened.
 Yfechched, 106/7, fixed.
 Yfownde, 124/22, founded.
 Ygerdonyd, 122/29, rewarded.
 Ygeten, 51/22, gotten.
 Yif, 4/21, if.
 Yiftes, 13/25, gifts.
 Yilden, 84/13, to give ; 116/1, to yield.
 Yildeth, 111/28, yieldeth.
 Yisterday, 133/28, yesterday.
 Ykawht, 92/20, caught, captured.
 Yknowe, 124/15, known.
 Yknyt, 104/25, knit.
 Yled, 123/3, led.
 Yleft, 8/12, left.
 Ylett, 125/23, hindered.
 Yloost, 20/10, lost.
 Ylorn, 114/24, lost.
 Ymaginable, 129/1, possessing imagination.
 Ymaked, 86/32, made.
 Ymedled, 109/4, mixed.
 Ynde, 60/13, India.
 Ynow, Ynowh, 55/34, 56/7, enough.
 Yok, 47/9, 81/27.
 Yolden, 16/10, yielded, given.
 Yowthe, 5/20, youth.
 Yplaunted, 51/16, placed.
 Yporveyid, 120/13, foreseen.
 Ypreysyd, 123/17, valued.
 Yren, 10/4, iron.
 Ys, 72/24, yes.
 Yset, 104/31, set.
 Yseyn, 135/27, seen.
 Ysmyte, 62/24, smitten.
 Ysped, 115/27, despatched.
 Yspendyd, 125/17, examined.
 Ysprad, 47/10, spread.
 Yssues, 62/8, issues, ends.
 Ysustenyd, 126/18, is sustained.
 Ytakus, 114/23, Ithaca.
 Ytravayled, 120/14, laboured.
 Yveles, 85/19, evils.
 Ywoven, 2/20, 105/33, woven.
 Ywroght, 2/24, wrought.
 Yxion, 84/18, Ixion.
 Yyeven, 110/3, given.
 Zeno, 6/19.
 Zepherus, Zephirus, 14/9, 26/27, the westerly wind.
 zeelde, zelde, 26/32, 41/3, seldom.
 zelde, 26/15, yielded.
 zelyly, 28/29, happily, blissfully
 zer, 111/28, year.
 zyt, 17/24, yet.

UNIVERSITY OF ILLINOIS-URBANA



3 0112 118417630